Christian Letters
OF
Mr. Paul Baynes
Replenished with diverse Consolations, Exhortations, and Directions, tending to promote the Honor of Godliness.

Hebr. 3. 13.
Exhort one another daily, while it is called to day, lest any of you bee hardened through the deceitfulness of sinne.

London,
Printed by A.G. for Nath. Newbery, and are to bee sold at his shop in Popes-head-Alley, at the signe of the Star. 1637.
TO
THE RIHG T
WORSHIPFVLL,
and Christian Ladies, the
Lady WE L D, and the
Lady LEN N ARD:
Grace, and
Peace.

Right Worship-
full and wor-
thy Ladies, if
there bee any one thing
wherein I make singular
account of my friends love,
it is, when by some good
meanes they are setting mee
forward in the wayes of sa-
vati-
vation: and on the other side, I cannot so rejoice in any improvement of my best love and service to them, as when mutually I may be a helper forward of their faith. I write not this, as favouring any ingratefull burying civill and humane kindnesses in oblivion, but as giving the preeminence to the worke of love, which especially is imployed in advancing that good part, which as our Saviour intimated to Martha, shall not be taken away from us. Let it not therefore I pray you (my honored good Ladies) seeme strange, that in the desire of the best good to your soules, I present to your view, and inscribe by particular Dedi-
cation to your Ladiships, the ensuing Bundle of Letters, part
The Epistle Dedicator.

Part of the workes of a reverend Divine, who living, shined as a bright Starre in the Church of God. For I am persuaded, with God's blessing, which is all in all, that if you attentively reade this Booke, you shall finde many sweet Motives to heavenly-mindedness, effectuall considerations to qualifie the bitterness of sorrow, which often betaketh us in this vale of Teares; and lastly, no small attractive to draw up your mindes from these vanishing delights below, to those hopes and joyes of an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, that fadeth not away, reserved in Heaven for you. I will not enlarge my selfe, to speake in commendation of the Author of these Christian Letters.
Letters, who no marvell hee speaketh to severall points so graciously, who felt heavenly strains in his Meditations so plentifully. This present Booke will (as his other Writings have done) speake for him, I doubt not, sufficiently. One part of which hath been transcribed while the Author lived, and the Copie was not to bee had in Print, in my knowledge, full many a time; yea, hundreds of times, or nearer a thousand times, if some godly persons have not mis-reckoned. Now, why I choose your Ladiships, in whose name to commend this Worke to the Church of God; though I might al-leadge other reasons, yet for the present let this suffice, That as you are Sifters in
nature, so you are neerer Si-
sters in grace, and therefore
well may bee joyned in one
inscription, whom God hath
linked in so holy union. I will
not by longer Preface hold
your Worships from the
Booke it selfe. Reade it, my
respected good Ladies; and
the Lord give you under-
standing in all things. Febr.
22. 1620.

Your Ladisships, readie
to all service in the
Lord,

Ez. Ch.

A 4
CHRISTIAN LETTERS:
Containing Divine Instruc-
tions, Exhortations, and
Consolations.
Will. Smith


Good Mistress B.
we must not think
it strange, when
need is, to be made
heavie with many
afflictions. For this
hath ever beene the portion of
Gods Children, who through ma-
ny Tribulations have entred in-
to his Kingdome. Hee that will
not let the shew and liveless Picture of Godliness goe, without
asrayling and overturning, how
much more hath hee an aking
Tooth at the Grace which is un-
A. 5 fained?
fained? Wherefore bee not dis-
maied, if Changes and Armies of
Trials should succeed each other;
rather rejoyce, that by occasion of
these things, you may see your
selfe to be builded on that Rocke
which none can prevale against,
though it bee never so assayled.
When the Windes blow, and
Stormes fall, then wee may see
what buildings have sure Foun-
dations: then those that are other-
wise, cannot be hidden. Our whole
care, when temptations follow us,
standeth in this: First, wee must
judge aright of them, and the end
for which God doth send them:
Secondly, wee must seeke wise-
dome and strengt, which may
make us undergo them, to Gods
glory, and our comforts. All evils
which befall us in soule, bodie and
condition, they are mediciable
sorrowes sent of God, that the
soule holpen by them, as by bitter
potions, might by renewed re-
pentance more and more purge it
selfe
felse of that true Soule-sicknesse, that sinne and corruption which dwelleth in it. If wee were as innocent as Job, yet must we hum-ble our selves under the hand of God, when he sendeth adversities. Wherefore, in all renewed occa-sions of this kinde, let us judge our selves, and grow more vile in our owne eyes; that thus humbled under Gods mightie hand, wee may further and further receive his grace, for the exalting of us. And this is the end of God, why he at many times bringeth many and divers adversities. The reason is: this exercise of a broken spirit may still bee renewed effectually in us: even as Physicians to bring away sicke matter more fully and safely, are forced againe and againe to open the veine, taking away now some bloud, now other some, as the partie may beare; so doth God, not at once, but many times bring away this corruption which dwelleth in us:

And
And as Physicians now give one thing, now another, lest nature, used still to one, should not be moved; so God doth sometimes in body, sometimes in mind, sometimes in our estate deal with us, because he doth see, that the longer we are used to this or that cross, the less it worketh with us. But lest we should be swallowed up of evils, we must joyne with care of humbling our selves, that wisdom and strength which may make us hopeful and joyful, even in the midst of our afflictions. The things that befall us, we must not looke at them by outward appearance, but wisely consider how they are changed in Christ, who hath taken away the poison which would bee in the evils we suffer, and made them serviceable for our good. As Children, through want of Wisdom, are troubled at Bug-beares; so we are much afraid of things which cannot hurt us.
us. This wisedome, which doth make us truly to discerne things as in Christ they are, doth make us courageous in bearing of them. It is better with the body when it feedeth on bitter herbes which breed good bloud, than when it feedeth on sweet meats, which ingender bitter vomits and mortall sicknesses. Againe, as all sweet, without any tart intermeddled, is not so pleasing: so if in the tenor of our lives wee should not sometime know diseasement, our comfortes would when we enjoy them be nothing so tastefull to us. Besides, wisedome will tell us that these things come and goe as the raine on our cloaths, which in a while drieth up, and all is as before: so when heaviness is with us in the evening, wee see joy returning even before the morning often. Did wee not through false glasses see things otherwise than they are, they would not cast us downe so much as the doe. Wee there-
therefore wisely observing how many ways the grace of God our heavenly father doth change these things into our good, even as the art of the Apothecary doth make a poisonfull Viper into a wholesome Triacle, we must choose rather affliction than vanity. Now we want strength, wee must being conscious of it, come to him, who maketh us able to doe all things through his strengthening of them, who strengtheneth his in the inner man to long suffrance with joyfulnesse, who hath said, Such as looke to me, shall renew strength. Our strength is to claspe Christ, and hold to him as the person in whom is all our strength. The Conies are a weake creature, but they digge in the rocke, worke themselves holds under the earth where they may be in safety: we are set to schoole to them to learne of them, that whereas we are weake, we privy to it, would by faith worke our selves
felves into that Rocke Christ Je-

sus, against whom the gates of hell
cannot prevale. When the Apo-

stles had received his spirit of
strength, they made a play of all
their sufferings and labours; even
as in bodily things we see men
that have strength and courage, as
these porters and such, they will
make a sport to beare such bur-
thenes as a weake creature would
tremble to lift at. Want of this
wisedome and strength, what voy-
ces doe they draw from us? Even
such as these; Were it any thing,
faith one, but this, I could hope to
receive good from it; Were it a-
ny thing but this, I could hope to
beare it. Whereas did wee put on
this spectacle of wisedome, wee
should see that there were no-
thing so fit as this to doe us good,
which God chuseth to use before
other. Did wee in conscience of
our impotency seke to Christ to
make us able, wee should not
doubt but to finde strength e-
ough
nough whereby to beare that comfortably, which wee thinke most intolerable. Wherefore, as I know you subject to some exercises, so I wish you more and more communion with your Christ, on whom resteth the spirit of Wisdom and strength, that you may beare them, yea be more than conqueror in them.

I doe desire to remember you with the first of those whom God by his providence hath endeared to me above others. Being not fit to continue long in writing, with my hearty commendations and thanks for all your love, I commit you to God.

Yours in Christian affection,

Paul Bayne.
MY Christian Friend, being much indebted unto you, for the kindneffe I have received from you, I thought good to let you fee that I doe not altogether forger, what I cannot so fully as I would require: wee cannot so discharge this debt of love, but that we must still stand indebted one to another. Now bethinking how I may bestow myself for your good, I doe not know any meane more fruitfull, than that of Christian exhortation, by which wee provoke each the other to love. Wherefore give mee leave to stir you up, but to labour for the present fruit of your affliction forepassed, and to prepare your selfe against future tryals, if God should be pleased to prove your patience yet further in time to come. Wee see the earth then having endured the nipping stormes of the Winter season, it commeth to receive into her bosome the beames of the Sunne now
now more approached, the earth lay before fruitless, doth put forth and become fruitfull: thus wee, though in the winter of our temptation, while the favour of God seemeth to have forsaken us, though in this taking we finde it enough to doe to keepe life at the root, yet when now God doth warme our hearts with the sense of his love, which is better than life it selfe, then we must labour to put forth both bud and blossome, yea to bee filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are to the praise of God through Jesus Christ.

When the Devill cannot longer hinder our deliverance out of any evill, yet he will labour to keepe us without understanding hearts, that wee shall not bee able to acknowledge God in that hee hath wrought for us: by which meanes the soule is kept from being bettered by that it hath received. If with our hearts wee understand not the loving kindnesse and faithfulnesse
fulneffe which God hath shewed toward us, then our love to him will not be increased, for we love him, because we finde him to have loved us first; our faith will not be strengthened, if wee have not observed how trufty the Lord is to all that believe in him: for this growth we take in knowing God by his word and works; this doth make us grow in believing on him: according to that, They who know thee, will truft in thee. Wherefore this being an enter-
prise of Satan, when hee cannot defeat us of good things, then to keepe us, if it be possible, from the spirituall fruit of them, let us bee wise to seeke unto God who hath said, I am he that teacheth thee to profit, that he would be pleased to give us his spirit, which may teach us to know what hee hath done for us. If this bee obtained, then the benefit will follow, both of our trials and deliverance: Our sinne shall be more purged out of us,
us, our graces shall bee more strengthened, yea they shall bee more active and stirring in us, making us more ready to, and plentiful full in every good word and work than before times we have beene. These are the chief ends for which God sendeth all our vibrations: as the end of bitter potions is to purge forth sick matter from the body; so all our griefs sent of God, are medicinable bitterness to cleanse our soules. Now as the faculties are strengthened in us when we are rid of such sick humour as did so offend them, so all the graces are the more confirmed by how much sinne is more removed. In the third place, a bodie, when sickness doth not weaken the faculties of it, is full of motion, sound bodies love to bee stirring, especially if coldness doe not benumme the members and make them unfit for motion. Thus the soule, when God hath scattered the cares and lusts which did oppresse
press'd, and by his love shed into it, dissolved that frozen coldness, which is an enemy to heavenly action, then it doth in love and zeal to his glory bestirre itself diligently, both in the duties of the general calling of Christians, and the particular callings in which we are in respect of our outward condition. These being the fruits which should follow affliction, give diligence to find them in you more and more: it is the seal of that election and calling by God, according to the purpose of life, when you feel that things work thus together for your good. Every base metal may be put into the fire, but that which abideth in it and commeth forth more refined by it, that is precious and of much account. Every man may be put into the furnace of affliction, but if we endure chastisements and come forth more and more purged by means of them, then it is a sure signe we are vessels
Preparation for evil times

Vessels of Silver, and vessels of Gold, ordained of God to glory everlasting.

Now I come to that second task, I did undertake of provoking you to prepare against times to come. Though great sicknesses breed sometime long health, yet it is true on the other side, that no wind but may blow rain when God is so pleased, no state so calm which may not soon turn tempestuous, should not the Lord be more gracious. The Devil, when now God hath made us get the upper hand of some grievous temptation, doth lie in ambush, and bend all his forces to draw us into pride, at least into security and presumption touching things which may hereafter befall. Wherefore seek to God to make you ready for every thing wherewith he shall try you. In peace we prepare for warre: weaying a weapon doth not make a man the sooner set on, nay it preventeth this danger.
danger sometimes, and always makes a man ready to defend himself when he is assailed. God doth set us to learn of the Ant this point of Wisdom: that small creature gathereth and hoardeth food in Summer, which may be sufficient in winter season: and when we have that providence in Summer to make provision of Hay and fodder for our beasts against their need, how should we be worthy rebuke, if we should not now in peace store up in our hearts those things which may be useful and helpful to us in time of our trouble? Now this practice standeth in three things chiefly. First, in getting a watchful capacity, by which our souls do discern aforehand what kind of events and exercises they are subject unto in this vale of tears. Secondly, in learning by due considerations, to know how wanting we are in wisdom, how weak in regard of that strength which maketh us able to stand when
when we are tried. Thirdly, In flying to God by faith, holding him, as who hath beene, is, and must be, the rocke of our salvation: looking to Christ the author and finisher of our faith, who hath received this commandement from his father, that he would not only call us and bring us into the state of grace, but keepe us in it and raise us up at the last day: who is a great Saviour, keeping his (as Paul faith) from every evill work, to his heavenly kingdom. Now when by faith wee thus hang on God our Saviour, then wee are, as it were in a strong Tower, wherein the gates of hell shall not be able to hurt us, much lesse to prevaile against us. God doth set us to schoole to the Conies, that of them we might learne this lesson: they are a weak, timorous creature, yet they have this wisedome to worke themselves holes in the earth, burrowes to which they may returne for shelter; and though they
they goe out sometimes, yet they still returne ever and anon unto their holds. Oh, so must wee, conscious of our weakness, by faith worke our selves into the Rocke Christ Jesus; and though sometime wee are abroad, as it were, in many other matters, yet wee must still returne and renew our believe towards him. I may not prosecute these things. The Lord teach you by his Spirit so to acquaint your selfe with him, that you may with much more confidence and boldnesse resorte to him in all your necessities. Moreover, I have sent you a Soliloquie, which I did long since pen, that it might bee an Introduction, leading by the hand a well-disposed Christian to take up a forme of words between God and his soule for the increase of his devotion. Thus with my hearts desire to God for you, I take my leave.
The God of consolation and compassion be with you, my good and loving Sister, and remaine with you for ever.

I know not whether I should write of gratulation unto you, and thanksgiving unto God for your deliverance, or else of some comfort against your troubles, if you yet remaine in them: Considering the Lords ordinary dealing, if you be not already delivered, your deliverance cannot bee farre off. But forasmuch as the wayes of God with his children are divers, whose steps wee can no more find out, than know the way in the aire where the bird hath flowne; I know not whether hee will hold you in the Schoole of your grievous temptations. Well, I am assured that the issue shall bee good, assured also that the length and grievousnesse of them, shall accordingly adde unto the weight and
and shining brightness of the Crowne which in Christ Iesus is prepared for you: assured finally that the comfort which those which are, or shall be tempted, will bee much the stronger and deeper, as they shall understand that you which have beene so long and so sharply exercised, were at the last so graciously delivered. Be therefore of good comfort (my good Sifter) although the Lord plunge you into the Sea, yet he will goe downe with you thither to kepe you, that you shall not bee drowned: although you passe thorow the fire, you shall not bee consumed, because he is with you: although hee leade you from one Sea to another, yet the Lord which commands both the seas and the fire (as all other creatures) will, for his deare Sonnes sake, worke that fire nor water shall not onely not hurt you, but profit you in sinning you more and more from the drosse of sinne, and washing you.
you from the common filth of the remnants of sinne which are in you. What do I say that he will be with you in fire and water? It is but a small thing in his eyes. If you were brought to the gates of hell; If hell gates had shut her mouth upon you, yet there his hand will be with you, and from thence his arm will deliver you. Yea, if hell had swallowed you up into her bowels, yet it must in despite of it render you up againe: Her stomacke cannot long hold you, no more than the great monstrous Whale could brooke Jonas, which if hee had light upon the wicked Mariners, hee would have devoured and digested twenty of them in lesse space. And this is indeed the promise of our Saviour, Matt. 6. That hell gates shall not prevaile against you. They shall fight against you, but shall not prevaile. Whereof I wrote unto you, for that our friend Master C. wrote unto me, that
that since my last letters you have beene terribly shaken by a forcible Tempest which the Enemie hath stirred up against you, wherewith hee had raised such a dust in your eyes, that you had in your judgement lost all sight of the grace and goodness of God in Jesus Christ. But be not dismayed, my Sister, for my part I am in good hope that even as a little before day-breake the darkness is greatest: so these grand Pieces which hee keepest in store untill the case be desperate, be, with the clappes they give, and mists they send forth, messengers of your deliverance, which is before the doore. The truth is, that as to believe God to be your mercifull Father, is a precious thing before God, so to doubt of his goodness towards us, is a great sinne. When further wee refuse the comforts and admonitions that hee offered out of his Word, the sinne is yet increased. If blasphemous
words escape us, yet sinne is made one faire higher. If your sinnes for the height of them, reach the very heavens, and for their breadth spread themselves from South to North, and their length from East to West: yet the mercies of the Lord our God in Jesus Christ over-reach them every way. For upon us all, that are thus overtaken by Satan, it is also verified, which the Apostle faith; that where sinne doth abound, there grace doth more than abound. These large promises hath the Lord made us to our everlasting comfort, which he hath set out by the measure of the obedience and sufferings of his deare Sonne Jesus Christ, the height, and breadth, and length whereof (as you know) is infinite, not onely, because hee was in such anguish of minde for us, that through griefe hee sweat (which was never heard of) drops of blood which came from him, and cryed, My God, my God, why haft thou for-
for taken me? but also for that his obedience is the obedience of the eternall God, and for that his sufferings are not onely the sufferings of a mortall man, but of the immortall God, which as the Apostle faith, with shedding of his owne bloud redeemed us: not that the Godhead could suffer the shedding of bloud, but because of the unspeakable unity of the two Natures, bound together in one person, that which was done to Christ the man, is, to our singular comfort, said to bee done of the eternall God.

Now for the keeping of our part, which we have in the obedience and sufferings of our Saviour Christ, you must turn your eyes from your selfe, and from your owne works, unto the Election and calling of God. For as the Lord saveth us, not because of our good workes, bee they never so many: so hee will not condemn us his Children, because of our evil
evill works, be they never so great. Hereunto the Lord calleth us by the Prophet Esay, chap. 45. where dealing with the rebellions Israelites, he faith, for Israel his chosen sake, and because they were called by his name, he would confirm them, and doe them good: because faith he, I loved thee, and because thou wert precious in mine eyes, and because I esteemed thee, I will doe this and this for thee: as if he would say, although thou lovedst not mee, nor esteemedst not mee. As for the Lords calling towards you whereby (as by a ladder) you may climb safely unto the counsell of God to know your Election, and what his secret decree of you was before the world was made, I referre you to that which I wrote to you before; the markes are many and certaine in you, you neede not, I wis, to have had so many and long temptations: to have thrown you headlong into everlasting despaire, if you
you had not belonged to the Lord. For as the Children of God are conquerors over many temptations, so one only temptation (and that a short one) is able to sink the stoutest among the Reprobates into the bottomless pit of hell. Neither must you think that the grace of God worketh alike in his Children. When you walke in the fields at winter, you see not onely no good fruit, but not so much as a leafe on the Trees, in some also the very trunk or stocke appeareth to be dead, yet is the sappe hidden in the root, which in due time will shew that the tree was never dead. Howbeit, I need not lead you into the fields, you have an example at home within your doores: For, when your fire is raked up, there appeareth oftentimes a sort of cold and dead ashes, when there are underneath certaine sparkes, of which you may afterward make a fire. And such is the estate
God's Children brought to great

of the Children of God, when through the sinnes they doe com-
mite, and wherein oftentimes they sleepe a great while, they appeare
unto men as forsaken of God, and remedileffe. How much more
ought you to bee of good com-
fort, in whom the Lord hath
set such notes of your eternall
salvation in Jesus Christ, that all
the smoke which the enemy hath
cast out, cannot take away the
right of them from us, or once so
much as bring us in doubt of it? I
grant you yourselves think other-
wise; but as in sicke persons wee
see it commeth to passe, that they
thinke there is no hope of life,
when the Physician and standers
by see certaine and undoubted to-
kens of health: So is it oftentimes
in these spirituall sicknesse. You
see David through the afflictions
which the Lord sent upon him;
wrestled oftentimes with despe-
ration, was oft brought into
doubt of his salvation, as you
may
doubts of their salvation.

may reade in the 42, 43, 77, and 88. Psalms. Where you shall perceive that he conceived of God, as of one in extreme anger and rage with him, as of one that had forgotten him, and had taken his mercy from him. There are also (I grant) voices of hope mingled with them, because in one and the selfe-same Psalme, hee changeth the whole course of his Meditations, how he floated, now up, now downe, now sunke, as it were, in the neathermost hell, now appearing and shewing his head above the waters againe. The Son of God himselfe through extreme anguish was (as I said) brought to aske of God why he had forfaken him? If the force of Temptations could bring him which had no sinne of his owne, and was the onely beloved of God, and which had received the spirit of fortitude above measure, to such a hard exigent and terrible conflict, we ought not to marvel if the Children of God, which
which have some dwelling in their mortall bodies, which are not beloved for themselves, but for his sake alone, and which have received but a few dropes of the Spirit (whereof he had the whole Sea) bee sometimes plunged over head and eares. And wherefore did our Saviour overcome that fearefull conflict of temptation, but that it should be our medicine when wee are overcome of it? Wherefore in this most great conflict did he not only retaine faith in his heart, but in calling him his Lord, professed it before men with his mouth, but that it should be our remedie, when we not only feel no faith inwardly in our heart, but deny also outwardly before men with our mouth, that we have any hope in him? Therefore our Saviour Christ in S. John placeth not our comfort in that we ourselves have overcome, but bideth his Disciples bee of good cheare, because hee had overcome
against temptations.

the World; that is to say, all contrary power to the will of God. Therefore also S. John in his first Epistle faith, That our Faith is that whereby we overcome the World: not only, because through Faith we vanquish the Temptations; but especially, because we by it, as by a Hand, apprehend the righteousness and victory of Christ, as a satisfaction of that wherein we have plaied the cowards. As for intemperate speeches (if any were) it is so to be considered, that they were not spoken (as they say) in cold blood, and of a malicious purpose, but in a passion, and of a troubled and a broyled minde, which the enimie, when hee hath you upon the wracke, wringeth out of you. And not only such speeches, but even some kinde of Blasphemie against the Sonne of God, the Son of God himselfe forgiveth. Else, I pray you, what should become of the holy man Job, which opened his mouth so wide of God; all which curses,
curses, sent out against the creatures of God, returned upon the Creator himself? And although in the beginning he opened his mouth against the Lord, as it were, a slope and indirectly of injustice, as may appeare both by his discourses, & by the Lords owne answer, which heemaketh in the end. Of the which man, notwithstanding all this, note (I beseech you) what S. Iames faith, chap. 5. You have heard (faith he) of the patient man Job. Here you see that hee calleth him so, notwithstanding all his frowardnesse against his friends, (which were good men, and came of good will, although they were not in every point so well advised) notwithstanding all his impatience against God inwardly, notwithstanding all his accusations and curses openly, which proceeded of impatience. If you ask how these can stand together, they stand well: forasmuch as the Lord forgiving and covering his impatience in
Jesus Christ, reckoneth with him as if he had spunne (so to speake) an even thred of his patience all the time of his Temptation, whereas notwithstanding hee made so many knots, and brake his thred so often. Even so (good Sifter) will he deal with you: for pardoning all your inconsiderate speeches, he will make his account with you for Jesus Christ's sake, as if you had prayed to him, and praised his Name, at the dayes of your Temptation. If some one which had borne you good will, and spoken much good of you, deceived by evill company, should happen afterward to revile you; I would aske you this Question, Whether, if such a one were sorrowfull for his fault, you would forgive him or no? When you examine your own Conscience herein, I dare answer for you, you would not refuse him, nor turne your face from him. Shall you, which have, in comparison, but a sparke of
of love, shew this mercie; and not the Lord, who is nothing else but a fire of Charitie towards them that cry him mercie, and as the Apostle Saint John faith, Charitie it selfe? Shall your spark confirme the forfait against you, and shall not the bonefire of the love of God in Iesus Christ, dry and liche up yours? Shall the cooling and refreshing waters of mercie and compassion bee found in a little Channell, and the Fountaine & Head-spring from whence it commeth, be dry? Considering, that in this respect, the Lords cogitations are as farre different from ours, as Heaven from the Earth. And the truth is, that the Lord hath therefore taught us to pray, Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us; to this end, that when we feel our bowels of compassion opened to those which offend against us, we might take that as a sure pledge and undoubted token of the for-giveness of all our sinnes, how great
great forever they be. Therefore to make an end where I began, Be of good comfort, deare Sister, you are the Lords, you have cost the Sonne of God too deare a price, to bee a cast-away.

4. Monitory.

Oving Cousin, it is my desire, while our lives are joyntly continued in this flesh, to testify my Christian love to you in such duties as tend to build you up in your holy Faith: it is a common debt, but yet such as we owe one another so much more abundantly, by how much we are linked more necessarily. I have thought sometime, that I would not bee so backward to this business; but then it hath come unto my minde, that you are well able to draw on others. Again, because I know not the things which in your confiding course most oppose you, whether wants of Graces, or presence of evill Lawes within us; because I knew not these particulars, I said
Hunger after Grace the signe of

with my selfe, I shall but shoot
without a marke, and hit a shoo't to
a foot I know not. To what pur-
pose shall I write? Indeed, wee
cannot prescribe so pertinently,
who know not the estate exactly;
and we prevent our selves in these
fruits of love, who make no relati-
on, and personall report, neither in
letter, nor by word of mouth, which
might helpe those that mi-
nister to us: but halfe a Cake, is bet-
ter than no bread; and a generall,
safe, and profitable practife must
not be neglected, because we see a
more fruitfull course, which wee
cannot attaine. To come then once
againe unto you in generall, till I
shall know some specialties, to
which I might speake more for your
advantage; there is good hope, that
body will doe well, which hath
the Romack right affected: Hunger
is a signe of health; so that sole
which hungereth and thirsteth af-
ter righteousnes, there is no feare
but it shall bee well-liking, and
prosper.
a healthfull soule. Motives to itt.

I will therefore endeavour to give a spurre to your spiritual appetite, that you may come, by means of it, to be filled with the fulness of God, with the replenishment of his grace. Now as in the body, when the stomack feeleth the emptiness & sucking of other parts, whole nourishment is wasted; then further craveth: So, when the soule doth feel how emptie it self is of grace, then the appetite of it s edged. Wherfore think with me, how wanting you are in these points following, that so you may see sharper set upon those graces whereof you feel your self so empty. First consider, how farre you are short of glorifying God as you ought: We should sanctifie him in our hearts, words, and works, upon all occasions, & it should grieve us to see him dishonoured. We should do all things in him, and for him: In him, that is, having his warrant; which we have, when by faith we know that it is well-pleasing to
How we ought to glorifie
to him, we should doe this, or that: yea, having assurance of his gracious presence with us, to enable us to all such works, in which we know it is his will that we should walke. We should, I say, doe all things for him, by making his honour the mark we shoot at, in every thing. Now, how little doe our hearts thinke upon him, admire him, joy that we know him, ascribe unto him Wisdom, Truth, Mercy, Power, in his daily works he worketh for us, while wee are passing thorow the barren Wildernesse of this present World, unto the Rest which he hath prepared? It should not be thus, Cousin. If we see any man that doth any thing more wisely, that doth shew a faithfull part, or a mercifull office, we think highly of it, and give it within our selves the due consideration: How much more ought wee to thinke honourably of God, in the daily works he sheweth? What a Power is that, which keepeth us to salvation,
on, who have so little strength, and lesse wisedome, whereby wee might stand in feare of our spiri-

tual enemies and dangers? What a power, that doth make the world, and the Tentations of it, dead things unto us; which are so migh-
tle, that the most are taken prisoners by them, and we should lie as Captive Thrals before this or that creature, if God should not subdue them, and hold them under us? What Power is that, which killeth
in full Lust in us; a thing of itselfe stirring and mightie, and insati-
ble in the course of it? Finally, that holdeth the life of grace in us?

To see a fire burning on the Sea, and to keep in fire on the Waters,
were a powerfull fact: but to keep the life of grace in a soule which is dead in sins and trespasses, is farre
treater. What Wisedome doth he

uily shew, in making all the things which befall us, serve for some good end? in tempering our

states, so that we are neither out of measure
Gods Truth, Constancy, and

measure oppressed with grievances, nor yet enamored over-much with the lushie sweetness of this present World: That doth by little & little lead us forward to perfection, yea, and to sufferings, according as hee feeth we are prepared, by his grace, and made capable of them? For his Truth and Constancie, he doth testify it abundantly: for wee are every day to seek to him; yet hee faileth not, though wee lye upon him, a sure friend. Againe, how many advantages doe we give him against us? How doe we, by our so little profiting and mending what we know amiss, provoke him? But he sticketh still fast to us, and all his wayes are full of mercy: hee feeth how weeke wee are, and doth so shield us with his favour, that out of pitie he will not let the Winde blow upon us. When we catch our daily falls, hee sends for us by his Spirit, and maketh all whole again. When strength beginneth to faile, hee, in pitie, putteth under, and re-
Mercy to his Children.

Weareth our strength. When wee are heavie, and poure out our hearts to him, telling him how it is with us, hee doth make us feele his peace and consolation. When hee seeth that evill things would grow upon us, he doth send some- thing or other, which may break the Nest of such matter, and prevent the mischief. Wee finally, which have soules that are al fores, see his mercie even in this; that hee ouchsfeth to handle our leprous spirits, and by renewing our repentant sense of miserie, and our faith towards his salvation in Christ, doth lay (as it were) every day a new Piaister upon them. Now then, not to observe and prosecute with due honour, such power, wisedome, Truth; Mer- cie is a defect to bee lamented. Wee take it for a token of an ill minde, when one will not give to men of parts, that which is their due. What mindes have wee, who give God no more in our hearts,
who is so to be advanced in these and such like respects as I have named? And this not acknowledged of him, in the daily experiences which we have of him these ways, doth make us as much to seek, when trouble commeth, as if wee had never been acquainted with him. Whereas, did wee acquaint our hearts with him in these his ways, we should finde it as easie to rest on him, in any triall and necessitie, as men doe one with another: they presume, such an one will not be wanting to them, whose trustie kindnesse they have had ful proofe of, as which never failed them. In the second place, as our hearts should with becomming affection inwardly honour, so our tongues should tell of him, making known such things as we know of him: to another these things, is his dishonour. Those that belong to great personages, they delight to tell of the valour, policie, bountie of their Lords: yea, we will do one another this
this credit, to tell what more markable parts we esp'y each in other. Why should our God set forth, and not have a word lent him this way? Finally, whatsoever we doe, wee are to see his leave and presence with us, and to intend his glory in it. We are not our owne men, but the Lords servants, bought with a price. Now we justly deem it irreverence in those that live under government, if they presume to doe any thing; much more, if they run a course upon their owne heads, not caring to take us with them, and know our pleasure. Again, men doe looke, that such as they keepe, should doe them honesty, and be for their credit: And we see the Retainers of Noblemen to addicted this way, that they run themselves into Books, and out of faire Patrimonies, and all to main taine a Gallancie, which they (though fallly) thinke much making for their Lords glory. Now if we lay these together, we shall find, that
that we in these ways have much been wanting to our duty. How little do we see and possess our hearts with the reverent and affectionate observing of that we daily receive from God, and so of that we find to bee in him towards us? Our hearts lie asleep this way. Little do we joy to be telling others, and setting forth our Lords honour unto them, that God might be glorified, and they thus provoked to seek the same service with us: and who doth feel this dutiful dependance towards God, which makes him looke up to the Lord, that he would witness to his soule, by his own holy Spirit, that his ways hee takes in hand are pleasing to him, that he will be our sufficiency in them? Alas, we begin our courses according to custome, and thinke no more of this, than as if we were not tied to such homage. We are as if we had purchased the Lordship of ourselves, and had in our own hands the power of our wayes.
Our Failings drive us to Christ.

ways. Now then, if you discern how you have failed in this great Commandement, of seeking to glorifie your God; and if your trying your strengths, in labouring the spirituall Obedience which these points decipher unto us, finde your unsufficiencie this way; then you shall find the emptinesse of Righteousnesse, which shall helpe you somewhat the more to claspe Christ, your Righteousnesse, that in him you may see your forgive

ness; and Christ your Sanctifier, that he would doe that hee hath promised you, even put his Spirit in you, and make you keepe these Commandements more and more, in these Branches above-named. And if the Lord shall give any spur to your Devotion, any encrease to your Repentance and Faith, by this meanes, I shall have cause to rejoice with you. I thought to have thus gone over some other Heads, to have helped you to see your want of Faith, and rejoicing in

C2 God.
God, and so to have touched those fears of future events, and possessing your peace, and that uncomfortable enesse which doth hang, in passing our time, about us. But read this other Letter I send you, again and again; and for the last, know that the Lord doth but hide from us, and let us feel weariness in going on, that so he might make us more depend upon him, and seeke to him, to shine upon our wayes, and to carry us on in them, when we seele our inabillity in our selves. But the Lord, I hope, will enable me at some other time to performe some duty to you this way. I let this beginning come to you, which lay so long written by mee. You must not thinke much I write no oftner; for since my comming home, I have had necessity to write very many wayes. I thanke you for all your love; and wishing you the sweet love of our God shed into your heart, I take my leave this sixth of December.

Owing Friend, wheras in your Letters you complain of tedious wearisomenesse, which in passing the day, doth ere-while close with us, of which we spake a little together. The truth is, though God doth somtimes, only to humble us, let such a wearisome vanity follow us, that hence wee might consider, what our sinne against God hath done: how to wit, it hath thrust us out of Paradise, to a laborious and irksome condition of life; that thus wee might be quickned, to beg in Christ that blessing, which doth mitigate those evils: Though againe it sometime doth only pursue us, because of performing our duties of devotion with too much overture; for this maketh God loath us: so that we find small ease, till wee returne againe, and shake our selves up better. Yet the common root of this griece, above named, is the want of conscionable dependance upon God for his blessing.
more affectuonately to looke into
 toplante within our selves, and
might make us come to new rec-
forebution ofter toake us, which
him, to let wearinesse and uncom-
feele powerfully to little need of
this make our God, when we now
which we might proceed. Now
higher for comfort or strength, in
prayer, not needing to looke
less, as if we were God within
naturally live, and hold on our cour-
secretly poynond. For we do na-
pretension with which we are
yet it is too true, in regard of thing:
end of any blest conformitie;
Gods : and though it be like
first parents, they should be like
such matter. The Diuell told our
we go on; as if there did need no
throughout the whole day. Also,
your strength and your comfort
looked to God, that he would
make thy heart wearisome, as make
you rise, such a sense of your owne
the day long. Do you feel, when
and strength to carry us on all
wee ought to Pray against it.

him, that he would be with us, and carry us on, and refresh us. Now if you discerne, that there is in you such a secret Selfe-sufficiencie, and that your spirit awakeneth not with such poverty in it, which maketh you looke up to God, with conscience of your infirmity, and confess, that if he be not your strength and comfort, you cannot passe one houre over, without weari some heaviness: if you finde that this is lurking, then you must turne you to God, and wrestle against it, saying: I need not muse much at this I finde: how should I but know fainting and discomfort in going on, who am so afflicted, as if I would goe alone, and had not need of thy helpe, O Lord, at all times, and in every thing, with me? How shouldst not thou, that singest out all pride, as the sinner thou wilt resist, bee much incensed at this hidden Selfe-sufficiencie, which doth pull thee out of thy Throne,
making thee no God to us, while we feel no need of thee; but are readie to goe on, as able enough within our selves to walke on in our wayes? Wee further confesse, that though we see the indignitie of this behaviour, yet the frame of our hearts is so out of order, that of our selves wee have no power to amend it: for as by na-
ture wee are fallen from faith on thee, so wee are filled with Selfe-
confidence, which makes us (though we know it not) rest in our owne strength. Now then, what shall we doe, but look to thee, that thou wouldest make us so poore in Spi-
rit, that we may with such feeling and lowliness depend upon thee, for all our strength and comfort; that thou (who shewest grace to the humble ones) mayest delight to minister them both abundantly unto us, that wee may walke up-
right, strong, and chearefull in thy strength? O Lord, we aske it the bolder; for thou haft promised, that thou
Prayer against Selfe-confidence.

thou wilt circumcise our Selfe-confident hearts, so that we shall have no trust in the flesh, but have al our rejoicing in thee. O Lord tell us, we beseech thee, make our hearts hear it, that thou who art not wearie, nor mayest not faint, wilt be our strong Arme every morning; say to us, that thou art our God, who wilt leade us to death: What joy can we have to set a foot forward any way, if thou dost not let us see that thou art with us? Our hearts thinke what thy servant spoke: if wee may not have thee in thy Word, testifying thy presence with us (for thy Word is our cloudie Pillar) it were better for us never to move further, than to goe on, not having thee with us. Following God with these things, you shall finde it not in vaine. Finally, this exercise of bewayling our want in some one thing, doth make us see what need wee have; that Christ should be made of God our righteousness, and doth make

C 5
We must show forth God's Grace.

us come feelingly to see the forgivenesse of all our sines, through him our great God and Saviour, who hath washed us with his bloud. I will leave off, though abruptly: my Letter growth in my hand, and if I should goe on, it would be more than your handful.

The Lord Jesus, who is the authour and finisher of all his graces in us, perfect you and all his chosen more and more, that in this life we may see the joyes of holinesse.


Christian Friends, Forasmuch as it is our dutie, who have bin under God's hand, to teach those that are under the same; and seeing we that have tasted grace, are effectually to sing the mercies of God towards others: in this regard, my Letters shall open these two things unto you so farre as I am able, if you are alive to receive it. I know not whether I shall write you another; if not, it shall returne
The Spirit, not affliction works repentance in your bosoms, that is written unto you. The end of these afflictions, so bitter and grievous, is to bore the ears of those that are the Lords, that they may hear this Commandement, of returning from all iniquity; and therefore we are bound in chains of affliction, that the eyes of our minds may be opened, to see our works and sinnes, the which are mightie. Now it is not the evils themselves, but the presence of God, by his Spirit working in them, which doth these things. For the mightie God (in the fifth Verse of that Chapter) is made the principal worker of these things, by the means of grievous calamities. Now this is a great mercie of God: for if we were not thus brought to repentance, we would neither see good daies here, nor escape the condemnation of the world, Cor. 11. Consider therefore, what evils of our lives the Lord would have us rip up and bewaile before him; and
We are apt to Selfe-conceitednesse.

and it is in generall, our disloyall estranging our hearts from him, that our hearts and delights have been more on the sinfull pleasures and profits of this World, than on the Lord, and on our most blessed covenants of dying to sinne, and living with Christ risen, in newnesse of life. I know, good friend, though you will not bolster your self altogether, yet you will hardly be persuaded, that your life hath beene no better than a spirituall Fornication from the Lord: for comparing your selfe with men, you may say, that you are not the worst; that howsoever you have failed, yet you have had some care of good duties, and some love and acknowledgement of Gods children, before others. Consider then, that God may have glory in our abasement, what were the dayes of your prime, and manhood, but spirituall Fornication from the Lord? Doubtlesse, I would not revive my old shame, but
God whippeth the abuse of our Peace.

but to helpe you in the practice of repentance, which without these particular considerations, is not easily taken up. And since that nature it selfe hath declined somewhat from this course; alas, have you not set your hart on the things of the world? hath not your love beene toward them, and your delight in them, and heavenly matter which should bee sought with all diligence, yea in the first place, have wee not looked on these as refuse-wares, out of request? This abuse of our peace, God whippeth. For whereas our peace should have turned hither, to have beene an occasion to edifie us more freely in faith, love, patience, and to have walked onward in the feare of the Lord, declining evill, and doing good should have beene a means of filling us with the comfort of the Spirit, wee have neglected to build up our selves in those graces, as if there never should have come a time to use them: wee have had
had no fear in our hearts of wicked companions, yea, of committing with them many wicked actions, we gave our selves to taste no joy, but carnall: for this, God maketh us eate our bread with our lives in our hand, that seeing wee would not in the fruition of these liberties, yet we might, with Jerusalem in the daies of our affliction, Remember the pleasant things which we formerly possessed (Lamentations the 17.) And what is it in a word, that bringeth forth all the curses of the Law? It is this, because that in our abundance and plenty, wee serve not God with good and with carefull hearts, Deu. 28.47. I do not remember these things to grieve you, for I have done no otherwise with my selfe, before these occasions came on me. What then if one have strayed thus, is there no mercy? yea truly, there is mercy with the Lord in Israel (in his Church) even for these courses! though wee have taken
Mercy for the greatest sinners.

taken strange wives, let us renew our covenant of turning from all evil, and following righteousness and holiness, and the Lord will be gracious. Read Ezra 10. and the 55. of Esay, the 6. 7. and 8. though our sinnes should appeare so great that wee did thinke them unpardonable, yet when wee returne, Gods thoughts are not our thoughts. If a mans wife should goe a whoring with another, though shee should come backe, he would not receive her; but though wee have strayed, yet the LORD biddeth us to returne, as ready to accept us, Jeremie 3. 1. How sweet a balme is this, if our spirit bee broken? now to draw to a conclusion, the soule is often in such plight, that it would turne, but knoweth not where to finde ability therunto: if this be your condition, that you come to groane under the hardnesse of your heart, which will not let you bee sorrowfull as you desire, remember
God the Author of Repentance.

ber to your comfort, that this is the voice of God's children, yea, his children repenting; Turne us O Lord, and wee shall bee turned. Jerem. 31. 18. Remember further, that CHRIST JESUS your Saviour is raised up of God, to bee our Prince, to give to us remission of sinnes and unsained repentance: he sitteth at the right hand of God, by his spirit to touch your spirit with unsained repentance. Now, if that the Lord doe gather you notwithstanding, forget not the consolation which faith, that for the abuse of the Sacrament many did sleepe, that is, they were smitten with temporary death, yet in all this they were but chastened of God, that they might not be condemned with the World. Yet I hope other things, because small is the number that feare him. Thus having signified my mind at large, I desire the Lords blessing, and your diligent pondering of these things, for in them stan-
Infiruation

handeth your everlasting peace. And thus commending me in true love to you and your wife, I do take you to the fatherly protection of my God. Farewell, this 11. of September.

Your loving friend,
Paul Bayne.

GOOD Mistresse P. when I thinke how I might shew you some dutie of love, I find no fitter way than by writing unto you and instructing you concerning your duty to God under this his holy hand, and his gracious purpose to you-ward in this his visitation. A letter will dwell by you and talke with you, so oft-ten as you reade it attentively, yea it will be ready whensoever you are the fittest for such businesse, which conveniency my comming to visit you, cannot alwayes attaine. To speake to the first point; When
When God's hand is upon us, we are subject to two extremes; the one is, not truly to lay to heart the hand upon us: the other is, to droope and be too much dismayed under it.

Now we must walke betweene these, truly humbling our selves under it; yet as who have hope in the faithfull mericies of our God, and therefore faint not. Now the divell, who laboureth still to turne us out of the way, will secretly worke with your heart, to ward off the smart of this blow by impertinent meanes, so that it shall not come kindly to pricke you unto repentance. To this end he will suggest, that you shall weare this matter off well enough, hold you to such and such things, that one is provided for, your care is to much lessened, that you have many behinde yet. Sometime you shall finde your selfe inclined to nap, as it were, in such a course as may make you forget sorrow for the pre-
Humilitie under Gods Visitation.

Present. If you finde not your heart lefte and turned out of it selfe, as it were, that it may meet God in this his chastisement, then you must thinke, O Lord, not to have a heart, thorowly cast downe by a strong a visitation, this is a greater plague than the plague it selfe. If strong physikel be given us, and it worke not with us, it doth poison us: O what shall I thinke if my heart bee not taken downe, and thorowly emptied, with this so strong a potion, which thou in thy Wisedome dost prescibe unto me! Againe, say to your selfe, What doth my childe get by playing hide-baire, or casting up the hand, when I correct it? Often, as much more as it might have escaped with: so Lord, if I doe beare off thy blow in this manner, I shall but force thee to double my Correction. If a Parent see his sicke childe, not the better for one medicine, he will seeke forth and get him another: so if I take not thy worke
The divell labours to make Gods worke so to heart as is meet, I shall enforce thee to send me more and more grievous things (if it may be) of this nature. Looking up to the Lord Jesus, in such like thoughts, will be a good preservation against this secret Folly and Hardnesse of Heart, which disablest us duly to weigh the Lords rebuke and be cast downe under it. Now if the Divell see that you are inclineable to grieze, then he will turne his course to the other hand, and will labour even to drench you in sorrow and make you walke hopelesse, and to faint under it. To this end he will hide from your eyes the remembrance of such things heretofore in which you might take comfort, yea keepe you from tasting the mercy of God, with which his afflicting hand is intermeddled. Secondly, hee will amplify before you the present hand of God, and all old matters which may serve for circumstances that make it more grievous. For example,
example, hee will whisper whose name is like thine, the pooreft, now you must pray and pay them, and they will not be gotten: the bothe the garden that was wont to be place of your solace, how is it become a place of separation for e infected, it may bee? every outh filled with this, The Plague at Miftresse F. the servant that ould eafe you, being a grievous irden. And here hee will preffe re all your weaknest in your overnement over your children, hich may make this stroke of od (among them) more deeply eft you. Finally will he say, Doe it you see what comfort com- eth to you? Thirdly, hee will de from your eies all the hope of ie, which God is most faithfull give in due season.

Now if you discerne that the utter hangeth on this side, then you must thus prevent your fain- ng: say with your felfe, Lord, why ould it be thus with mee? doth not
not my child take bitter or sweet which I give it, and shall not I take this cuppe from thy hand? Shall I take good, in good worth from thee, and not evill? Art thou not as mercifull in providing us Physicke for our soules health, as in all thy other daily benefits? Meat is more necessary than medicine, in the season of it: and what are these evils thou tendest, but physicke of our soules health? For the good of our bodies wee take things against which our stomack riseth, our flesh shrinketh as wee take them, and we labour to keepe them their time. O Lord, when thou ministrest for our soules good, yea, our bodies, estates, and posterities after us, shall we not be as willing both to receive and retaine in thought, thy courses to this purpose, I meane which tend to our spirituall good? Secondly, you must not dwell in, but turne your thought from such particular circumstances as doe but weaken you,
Affliction bitter, but medicinable.

you, looking both at things past, present, and to come, which may minister comfort unto you. When we have a bitter potion to drinke, we doe not (if we bee more averse from medicine) taste every drop at the tongues end, but turne it in by great, and we thrust in some Roseate, or Manus Christi after it: and we think upon the after-health of our body, to which it worketh, and thus we get it downe, though otherwise wee have no mind to it. The Lord give us his wisedome, for our soules, that wee may not dwell too much in exact scanning such particulars, by which the devil seeketh to winnow our belief, that we may remember his sweet mercies, and think of our soules health, which God worketh by them. Now whatsoever things are objected, such as are true must bee granted, but so, that hope bee not therefore weakened, in this wise; Lord, it is true, that I have many wayes provoked thine anger, but thou
Christian moderation necessary

thou art a God that wilt not keep anger for ever, thou wilt not have man so nourish displeasure in himselfe, that the Sunne should go downe in his wrath, how much lesse wilt thou be irreconcileable? O no, thou art as quicke in forgiveness to a contrite heart, as slow to conceive a wrath against us, of which we have good experience daily. And Lord, it is true, thy hand is extraordinary and many wayes heavy upon me, but I have learned that I must not chuse my owne rod, with which I will bee beaten, but leave that to my Fathers wisdome. Again, I know that my need doth require it all, we are made heavy, when need is, with sundry tentations, faith Peter. A wise Physician will not give a strong thing, where a lenitive and gentle matter is enough, much lesse wouldest thou. And I further confesse, that I may bee justly upbraided, with my former wants, but Lord, I beleive there is mercy with thee, rea-
in afjliftioB.

reaching to forgiv«ncffe,t hat thou

be feared, and that this is
thy chhfe glory, there is none like

raaieft

to thee in fbrgivencfle3 in paffing by

of thy people. O Lord,
what neede I thy grace and mercy,
if I were not in myfelfe ill deferving and miserable > and though I
the finnes

feele not the comfort I defire, yet
I

doe bcleeve thy mercy no lefle in

Chrift

:

a Father doth not greatly

piety his childe,when hefteth

him

of PhyGcke newly taken 5 for
hce knoweth that if it fhould not
worke with him,it would doe him
no good, and hee knoweth that his
childe (hall be well enough, when
the working is over. Sodoft thou,
Lord; which makcth thee hide
ficke

when wee arc
much raone,

troubled, and not

becaufe thou

fteft

there is no hurt toward us,though

wee feeme to fede the contrary,
though it might feern we (hall never have day again.No yv then both
the by-waies being difcovered,

it

will be more cafie to informe you,

D

con-


concerning the right way in which you must walke that you may come safe forth of these troubles. If you ask how you are to walk, that you may have happy issue? I answer in few words, so that you joyn with repentance hope towards God, that he will heale these things and love you freely. First, be not affraide to remember sinnes past, God will make triangles of these vipers. Here if you have beene subject to great unfruitfulness, lament it; for we, the more we bestowed on our grounds, looke to reape the more from them; If to distrust in your heavenly Fathers care over you, if unto too much neereness, which is often a daughter of distrust, if to quicknes, if to any infirmity (for the spirit of man knoweth what is in man) recount it with your heart, judge your selfe worthy to be cut off for such waies wherein you have swerved, if God should deale in justice, and not in mercy. Secondly, strike a
new covenant with God for the time to come, that through his grace you will have care more and more to mortifie every evill way, and to be fruitful in every good worke. Looke Ezra the 10. Chap. 2.3. Thirdly, you must looke to the Lord, as who only must heale you, hoping in his mercy; He is the healing God; He that layeth the rod on, must take it off; and if a debter will be forth of danger, hee must compound with his creditor, who only can free him from feare of arrest. And here you have great cause to watch over your heart, that in use of means it be not withdrawne from the living God. We are such creepes that we can hardly reach a Crutch into our hands, but that we will walke also leaning upon it. Now God onely is your life and length of your daies, these things without him, will stand us in no stead, it is not the Apothecaries drugge, but the use of it, which the art of the Physician teacheth, that
healeth a disease. So much more may we say, it is not the creature, but the Lord's use, and application of it to this or that purpose, which standeth us in stead. Yea, I would wish you not to meddle much with things of this intention, lest while you prevent the plague (which it may be God will never let come nigher your person) lest I say while you doe this, you cast your selfe into the burning Fever, or some distemper of that nature. Now when you finde your selfe unable to doe these things, you must, grieving at your wants, looke unto Christ, who doth give repentance and pardon of sin to his Israel, and who is both the beginner and finisher of their faith. Now to adde a word concerning Gods intent, it is ever gracious to us that are his. When he frowneth, he is a Father, no lesse than when he smileth upon us. A man will beare much when he spieth this, that it commeth from love it selfe, and from love procee-
The sweet fruit of afflictions.

deth every course, he passeth upon us, as well this of adversity, as the other of prosperity. Whom he loveth he chasteneth, saith the Scripture. If we marke what God doth by them, it is more apparent: for heeth us by suffering a while, to receive all good things, both of this life, and that to come. What doth a Christian heart desire? That it could believe on God, giving glory to his Word, that it had more strength of grace, that it might feel a decay of sinne, and be preserved from falling into it: that it might grow up in acquaintance with God, and come to taste his love, more and more, which is better than life. Now these things God worketh by afflictions. For he taketh one, and putteth him past the helpe of all the creatures, to no other end, but that he might learn to believe on God the Creatour, who giveth life, 2 Cor. 1. For such is the wickednesse of our hearts, that they will never make out to
purpose unto God, while they have any sensible helpe, in which they thinke to finde succour.

True it is, we feele faith rather weaker for the time, but shaking the Torch, which for the present seemeth to put it out, doth make it blaze: Phyfick, which for the time weakens, doth tend to strengthen the body, the same may be said in this. Secondly, these through the worke of God, purge out our corruption: as the fire is to drosse, so are these to the remainders of sinne in us. True it is, we feele more stirring of corruption under them sometimes for a while, than before: but as Phyfick then expelleth faultie humours, when it worketh upon them, and maketh us complains, as feeling them more than when they were let alone, so doth Gods Phyficke to the soule: even it is driving our corruption then, when it makes us feel, and complain of it more than ever. God by these doth make us partakers of all grace and holi-
holinesse. Wee wish that we were able to do thus and thus, but when God doth come to us in this kind, then hee further eth those desires: for as seed putteth forth, by means of raine, which seemes to drowne it, so doth the seed of God grow in us, by meanes of such troubles, which one might thinke would overwhelme it. These againe are sent to prevent the future breakings forth of our corrupt natures. For as you give your little ones Cordialls now, not that they have the sickness, but that you may keep them from taking infection: so doth God put these cups into our hands, not so much for sinne past, as for preventing sinne to come. Finally, we come to acquaintance, and to feele Gods love more abundantly by these: adversity breedeth patience; patience, experience of Gods loving helpe to us in due season: experience of this love, hope: and as lovers are never greater friends, than after their fallings out: so it is with
with God and the faithful souls: thus is it with you. God doth now prove you, that he may in your latter do you good (I hope) through Jesus Christ: for as men will first try, before they commit any great matter of trust; so doth God with us, he doth come and try our behaviour, when he is willing to trust us with his blessing, and with benefits both spiritual and corporal. Wherefore looke, good M. P. with your Saviour at the end of the cross, that will sweeten the bitterness of it. Wee never greatly stick at such trouble, which we know will pay well at the parting. Thus shall these your troubles (waiting on Jesus Christ the Lord) through whom all things worke to your good. It may be, you will thinke this is true, you could believe it, but that you see no such likelihood of mercy toward you. But this is as if you should say, I would beleev on Christ, if I might see him, and put my fingers in his wounds, no: we must not be

Thomases,
God angry with his, yet loves them.

Thomas, but pray God to increase our faith, that we hope against hope, and believe that we see not that so at length, we may see the things we believe. I, but you may think God cometh in anger against you. I answer, God's anger is not without love, when he deals with his children; from love it cometh, and it tendeth to your renewing of love. Again, as I told you, he is a God that will not keep anger, we looking to him, in that Son, in whom he is well pleased. If one of our children should say to us when we are justly moved, Father, you mean me no good, for you are angry, we would answer, Because I mean thee good, therefore I am angry. Looke to him that hath said, Though I correct you, yet my love will I never take from you. Wait upon him, who though hee make heavie, yet will returne & comfort in the multitude of his mercies, Lam. 3. 32. And the Author and Finisher of our faith, help your be-

D 5
Duty of love to admonish.

leafe, and hee that giveth wise dome without upbraiding, give you wise dome to carry this present exercise of your patience to his glory, and the great increase of your after comfort.

8. Expostulatory.

Dear Madame, I have beene long unable to set pen to paper, which hath kept mee from performing the best office of love that is within the compasse of my ability, but since your love did get the start of mee by preventing mee with your kinde remembrance; it hath been a spurre further inviting mee to this duty, which I had within my felse voluntarily vowed. My minde is to advertise you out of love, of some diseases which I feare grow upon your soule, and to give you occasion through Gods bleffing, of renewing your repentance unto salvation. God commandeth to exhort one another, lest our hearts be hardened through the deceitful-

ness.
True love cannot flatter.

nefe of sinne, and to consider one another, that we may provoke to love. As this imboldeneth mee, so I am encouraged from hence not a little, that I know the patience of your care to admonition, with more adorneth the inward man, than any care-ring of Gold can grace the outward. But should your L. take that with the left hand, which I reach with the right, this should not be a Superfeder to mee, compelling mee to desist from performing my purpose: for I account him a covetous flatterer, which for the good of those he oweth duty to, will not venture a word, which may adventure (for a time) the lesse of his favour. Wherefore professing before God my love to your L. Soule and Name, and assuring my selfe that hee will be my all-sufficient reward, while I walke before him in uprightness, give mee leave to tell you, what I have a long time suspected. The grace of God
God teacheth all such as taste it, to live, shewing forth godliness, sobriety, and justice, in this present evil world: and the way of the righteous should be like the Sunne, which rising more dimly, doth still increase in the light and heat of it, till it come at the highest. Now my feare is, lest your godliness, which hath beene sometime very conspicuous in you, be somewhat abated, lest the care of temperance, and equity, which you owe toward the meanest, be diminished: lest some spice of the contrary breed about your soule, as a sicke humour: which though it cannot quite choke and extinguish the life of grace, yet it hindereth that growth and thriving of it which is to be wished. If I should feare beyond that I have ground for, yet you are to censure it as a fruit of love, while it stirreth mee up to any good office about you, as Job's feare about his children, is manifest to have flowed from his singular
The life of godliness.

Singular love, by the sacrifice it moveth him to offer in their behalfe. But how justly my fears is conceived, I will leave it to your conscience to judge, when I have made narration of the particulars following. What (good Lord) should shew forth the life and power of your godliness? Is it not the careful getting of such means as may further it in you and yours? is it not the reverent and religious using of them? Is it not the cleaving to those more affectionately than to others, who are before others in godliness? If in your course these waies be considered, it will appeare that even in this regard there is such defects as you must diligently labour to supply. The means, next to the publike, of promoting godliness in you and your family, is the presence of one who is prudent to know your estate, and faithfull to advertise accordingly. The flying exercises of men that come and goe, doe not set forward this plough,
plough, like as the constant presence, word, and example of one who knoweth you, and is known of you. Now, when you are where publike meanes may be had, such as your selfe esteeme powerful; is not your L. more remissely affected toward them, than becommeth a zealous godly minde, yea; than sometime you have beene, when you should frequent them diligently, though sixe times more removed than now they are? For though, when naturall strength faileth, there may be an omission of some outward meanes, without prejudice of inward devotion; yet God hath given you so able a habit of body, at your yeeres, that you can venture as farre, either for exchanging civill courtesses, or for refreshing yourself with such contentments, as the civill communion of friends doth afford. For the private meanes, the constant residence of one, who might bee as a private See to you and
and yours; have you prosecuted this, with that devotion you ought? Then should not want of a Bed, have kept mee this Winter from being with you; then could you not, after you had tasted my Doctrine, and seen (for my measure) simplicity, and innocensse in my conversation, you could not (I say) with such overture have reinvited mee. To speake sparingly; I have observed in you an affection, such as is in those who cheapen; who would have the thing, but for cost: contrary to the Merchant spoken of in the Gospel, who would sell all, rather than not carry away his commodity with him. Wherefore, laying your hand on your heart, bethinke your selfe, where is that due affection, to the best meanes of building you up in grace: If this one thing were as much in your desire, as Davids; you would not rest, till you saw your soule possessed of it; the
We must be harshest after the mares.

the wife Merchant doth not onely account of the pearle & Treasure, but hee selleth all, to purchase the field in which the Treasure is hidden; so highly hee reckoneth of meeting with such an one, who is as a Vessel, in which his Christ is contained and conveyed unto him. The violent receive the Kingdom. The Lord keepe us from following that which belongeth to his business, with a cold indifferency. It may be you thinke; Why? I am not destitute, I have the Labours of many Christian men, as they may be procured. To which I answer: It is not in bringing forward Christians, as it is in raising other creatures. Change of Pastures will make fat Calves; but changing of Preachers, neither knowing you, nor knowne of you, will never bring your soules to be well-liking, and take increase before God, as they ought: it will not helpe the Babes growth, to get it a weekly change of Nurses. Besides,
fides, when strangers come, they see the fairest piece, the out-side only; and if (in some one) they heare something not good, yet being soone possessed with that great and good report of you and your Family, they rather count it a singular exorbitancy, than any thing customary in your servants practice. Hence it is, that they come and goe, sometime giving commendations, sometime touching the local grieves, the fores of your household. Wee will not have one make us a shooe, who knoweth not first the length of our foot: and were wee to use the Physician daily, wee would not still commit our selves to new ones, who never had observed our bodies. If wee are to use counsell, wee keepe to such who have the best insight into our cases. So in the Physicians of our Soule, it is a great advantage to have them to minister to us, who by their constant observation are best acquainted with our necessities.

Where-
Wherefore execute your purpose, so long since settled; mercy beginneth at home: Will you be better to many other Churches, than to the Church in your owne house? But to leave this Head, of getting the best means, and a little to consider the manner of using such means as you enjoy: Godliness standeth not in bare hearing, but in hearing like Cornelius, like the Bereans, in taking heed how wee heare, that wee may grow by it. That is true Divinity, that maketh the Christian: not what wee doe, but how wee doe it, doth witness to our soules, that wee are sound Christians. Now, good L. I doe a little suspect, that you turne over these duties in such perfunctorie sort ere-while, as if to have done the worke howsoever, were sufficient. I am afraid you finde nor, after these exercises of hearing, that powerfull worke, in mortifying all sinfull lusts and aberrations in practice, in strengthening faith,
We must practice what we hear.

in conforming spiritualtie, in making you heavenly minded; I fear you finde not this efficacie, which the Word hath where it is duly mingled with beleefe. I have observed in your L. a readiness to heare alwaies, but not a proportionable care of chewing the Cud, of digesting and incorporating it into your soule, and praettising the things you have heard. This maketh the Word you have heard, vaine; and nothing seene of it, in regard of alteration, or augmentation caused by it, in him who is the hearer. And as they who know not what it is to pray conscionably, will call most readily and freely for prayer; so many will call freely to heare, not that they feel spirituall hunger, but because they consider not what goeth to hearing conscionably, in regard of preparation before, watching over our selves in it, that wee may feel it fruitfull in us. Againe, I have seene you, in prayer, without cause of any
Gods service, not to be done Overly.

extraordinary weakness rise from kneeling to sitting; which kind of liberty doth not well suit with that Religious reverence, which becometh Gods servants, while they worship before him. Yea, I have heard, that it hath been talked in houses where your L. hath lodged, that my L. N. would have her man reading a Chapter by her, and her selfe be sometime talking, sometime smiling, yea, now and then chiding, at the same time. I cannot hide it from you, I heard it with griefe; and whether it be true or false, you have need to make use of it. Deare Madame, take heed how you heare, looke to your feet, to the affections of your heart, when you come before God. Hee will be sanctified in such as draw neere unto him, or he will do as he did to Aarons sones, hee will glorifie himselfe in judgements on them. One may heare, call others to heare, give commendations to the things and manner
Lusts hinder the benefit of the Word.

ner of speaking, welcome the person, fasten a gift on him; and yet in all this, be devoid of life and power of Religion, in hearing. Endeavour to expel those lusts, which clogge and presse downe your soule; then the milke of the Word will be pleasant, and profitable. To take sustenance, while the stomacke is surcharged with superfluities, hurteth the body: so, till we labour to emptye our selves of the lusts that hang about us, the benefit of the Word cannot be perceived. And againe, when you have heard, labour that you may profit by it, that you may feel all sinfull lusts weakened, grace strengthened, faith & knowledge encreased, your practice bettered. Should any eat never so much, unlesse he digest it, turne it to blood, distribute it into the veines, &c. what is the body the better for that which it received? For the third evidence of a godly heart, to wit, the cleaving more affectionately to those who are
We must get us gracious servants. We

are more godly, than others; I
would there were no defect in this
regard. I have observed, that you
can equally impart your favours.
If any have points of service, and
can apply themselves to your hu-
mour, though they have small ac-
quaintance with God, they shall be
countenanced. This maketh your
family Linifie-woolfie, confirmeth
the haunts of some in their care-
less course; this maketh those that
are good, more remisfe than they
would be: should they finde from
you greater encouragement. Da-
vids delight was in the Saints; hee
did purge his family of such as
were unprofitable, and graceless:
such as laboured to please God in
all things, not such as could get the
length of his foote, were precious
in his eyes. Can a loyall Wife
take pleasure in such men who are
observant and officious about her,
and be devoid of all respect to-
ward her Husband? Are you be-
trothed to your God, in Christ;
and
and can you abide their service about you, who are carelesse in duty toward your Lord, with whom you are contracted? This sheweth, that godliness is much decayed, yea, that God is put downe, and our selves set up as God, in our owne hearts; when we can like of men, not as we see them sincerely serve him, but as their behaviour is more or lesse pleasing and contentfull to our selves. But to leave this first point, (in which, desire of your good hath made mee more prolique than I intended) and to come to the practice of sobrietie, which the grace of God teacheth us who have truely tasted it: even as a man who hath tooke in the taste of the best creatures, cannot forthwith feed on that which is meane, course, and no way to be compared to it; so a Christian, who hath tasted the goodnes of his God, which is better than life, cannot affect, as sometime before he did, these sen- tial delights, which carnall men, who
Intemperance in lawfull liberties.

who know no better (like as Swine do swill) follow with gree-
dinesse. Now I feare me here also, left those spirituall sweetnesse being somewhat eclipsed, intempe-
rate cherishing the body, and cares of the world (partly through fruits you have traversed, partly through kind supports of many) doe steale upon you, and win ground more than they have done heretofore. I know God doth keep your L. from excessive curiosity, from open glut-
tony, from drunkenesse, but as in-
justice is not onely in unlawfull stealth, but in covetous following a lawfull calling: So intemperancy is not onely in these outrages expres-
sed, which are openly unlawfull, but also in the leffe holy temperate and reverent use of our lawfull-li-
berties and repasts, in eating and drinking wee must labour to feele our thankfulnesse renewed, as the effects of our heavenly fathers pro-
vidence are renewed: we must la-
bor to be heavenly minded, feeling the
The sands, as well as the rocks, &c.

the gracious presence of God with our spirits at our sweetest feasts: it is a sopor, when we feare not in our feasts, as who are conscious of the snare that is in every creature, and our owne weaknesse. Finally, we eate intemperately, when we keepe not power over our own appetite; when we put not our knives to our throats, upon feeling any inordinarie moving in us towards this or that: like as *David* did, who sacrificed the Waters which hee had so importunately desired. Happy are they who finde not in lawfull things, in eating, drinking, building, &c. A Ship may miscarry, not onely by hard rockes, but by soft sands; which though they are not so violent, yet they are no lesse dangerous. To feede often liberally, not refraining any thing to which ones appetite leadeth, to be gratifying the stomacke, now with one thing, now with another, alas, what doth it? It distempereth the flesh with lust, it doth

E make
We must weane our selves from, &c.

make the very soule fleshly affec
ted, it indisposeth us to those ex-
cercisies which are performed by the
mind, it makes us fit to be kindled
with wrath, or any such like pas-
tion. Finally, it taketh up the mind
with thought, what it shall next be
served with in this kind. Where-
fore, deare Madame, if any spirit of
humane frailty hath cloven to you
this way, remember you are a tra-
veller, neerer your journies end,
than when you first beleeved. Gird
up your loynes, tuck up this traine
of lusting, which will make you
unfit to take one step this way,
without hinderance. The hours
grow on, wherein these things
will yeeld no delight; wee must
weane our selves in time, that our
last weaning may not seeme too
bitter and grievous to us. If wee
dishonour God, by unwrenced use
of these things, the Lord will pay
us home in our owne coyne, and
scourge us by that selfe-same in-
temperate practise, by which he
was
Intemperance hurts soul and body.

was dishonoured in us. How many hugge themselves to death, and by powring on too much Olle, quite put forth the Light of Life? I am no Physician for your body, yet I doubt not, but the striving with your selfe, to use your lawfull Liberties and Repasts more holily, temperatly, and reverently, (let him that is holy, be more holy) will be very beneficall to your body. For feeding the stomacke full, so as superfluities are engendred, this breedeth the matter of the Stone, and augmenteth it where it is breed, warming the stomack now with one thing, now with another, this doth beget and encrease the heate, which taketh the matter fore-named into this forme, in which it is voyded.

Concerning that last matter, which all must practice, who know the Grace of God in truth, viz. Justice; even in this I have some feares, which I cannot conceale: and to spare what I have heard
reported, as the talk of some, that your L. lettereth up Lectures, your debts undischarged (for it is my meaning to deale only in such matters which my selfe in some sort have observed.) To spare this therefore, my feare is, that you shew not that equity towards all under you that you ought. It pleased God to bestow the childe of a most reverend man, N. N. with you, whom you have not intreated well, but provoked and grieved rather, with excessive severitie and contempt, than encouraged, by shewing any motherly affection and honour, such as a Christian Lady cannot but know her selfe to owe to the least of her handmaids. The note I tooke of this in my mind, made me first use that phrase in Prayer, That God would guide us, who govern, to carry our selves with such moderation as be seemeth them who know, that even them selves have a Master in Heaven. Alas, whom doth your anger pursue?
The barmelesse most barmed.

A fatherlesse childe; who out of conscience doth humble her selfe under you. Many weake persons are sicke of an evill sickness; they will make boldest to offer all hard measure to such whom they know most innocent and barmelesse; not caring what they doe to such, because they thinke they doe it safely, and shall heare nothing but good after it. Whereas the same persons will be often very equall to those who are of worse disposition, and take such freedome in sinning, that they will not spare for any meanes, which themselves or their friends can use, to cry quit with such as shall provoke them.

The Lord keepe us from this wickelednesse. Watch over your selfe against this passion. It unfitness you for prayer: It is not so light a thing in acting, as heavie when the conscience calleth to reckoning; to wound the soule with words, and by immoderate displeasure to make the life of the Orphant heavie; to
Governours to be milde and gentle.

make the heart of a Widdow sad; (for she is a Marble, not a Mother who grieveth not in the Childes grievance) to shew dishonour, not onely to the living, but to the dead also, so neere and deare to the Lord: I tell you, these are great things, if you looke not on them through the false glasse of distemperate passion. As God hath bid them honour you, so hee hath tyed you to honour them, and be rather a Mother, than Lady and Mistresse to them. For this cause, the Lord doth comprise Governours under the name of Fathers and Mothers, to put them in minde of doing duty to inferiours, as well as receiving service from them. God hath commanded us, that our brother be not vile in our eyes, that wee provoke them not, that we shew all equity, not ruling over them with a strict hand, as Egypt did over Israel; that wee follow lob, in letting them expostulate reverently with us, when they find grievance; and not to be like
like Nabal, who was so vile, none might speak a word in his ear, which did not humour him. At our command, our servants think not much to doe services even about our Horses heeles: shall we thinke much, at Gods command, to performe those most equall offices toward those whom God hath put under us, who are sons and daughters of God with us; Heires of the selfe-same hope, to which we are called? Should our Master in Heaven lowre on us, and contend with us on every occasion; could wee stand before it? Let us not be so severe and irrefull, who stand so much in neede of mercy and indulgence. Wherefore, to close my advertisement, doe not onely leave those things, but judge your selfe, for whatsoever frailty hath escaped you this way, and returne againe to the Oath and Covenant, renewing your Vow before the Lord. Doe not reason in your heart, Why doe I not thus, and thus? Doth not
God allow us lawfull liberties? Why? mee thinkes our Minister might give mee leave with my Maides? Should I a little wrong them, cannot I make all whole with some benefit unexpected? Where hath he learned to beleeve reports, not having heard any thing from my mouth? These are but suggestions of Satan, to make you fall out with medicinal counsel, by which your soule should be healed. You do many good things: But God will not, for any good offices, see any evill in which wee walke, so as not to dislike it. Looke his Epistles to the Churches. A-gaine, why should a few dead Flies marre a Boxe of precious Ointments? God doth allow us lawfull liberties, provided that wee use them lawfully, practicing holinesse, religious feare, and temperancy in the midst of them. I may not hate you so, as to let your soule sinne towards a servant; and wee are to teach your L. as well how to
Good intentions excuse not actions.

to govern, as your servants how to obey in the Lord. And you may
doe that, you cannot heale; you may impaire naturall indowments
of minde, by such courses, more than you can recompence by any
Largeffe of your liberalitie: for intending future good, will not
make that well done, which for the present is evill. For my selfe,
I write nothing, but by way of Christian feare, I have arguments
too many, to make me believe in part, what-ever things I pro-
pound unto you. Turne from these thoughts, as you would from the
Divell himselfe; they are onely prompted, that they may keepe
your heart from repentance. Delay not, while God sendeth you a mes-
fenger, and knocketh; for if you will not heare this gentle voyce,
you know not in what kind he will speake, the next. Beside, see that
delayeth to set a bone out of joynt, doth but double his smarr, when
it is to be handled, and restored.

E 5 Not
Conscience like a looking-glass.

Not to mention that he that returneth not into the way, in such a party that which is halting, is subject to go quite forth of it. It may be you do not see your conscience greatly checking you in these things. I am the sorrier if you should not but Madame, remember whether it hath not checked you; and whether by not hearing God's Spirit, you have not so grieved him, that he keepeth silence. But howsoever, the Conscience is like a looking-glass, which while it lieth all covered with dust, cheweth not small matters, but when it is wiped, then it maketh the least thing apparent. So the Conscience being clouded with passion of lust, custom, examples, &c., discovereth not many things, when it is awaked, & those misds dispelled, it presenteth as grievous sins, the things which we before made light account of. It is one thing not to have an accusing Conscience, another thing to have a clear Conscience.
A man may have the Stone, who feeleth no Fit of it: A man may have, in some regard, an evill Conscience, who feeleth, for the time, no Fit of accusation in it. Therefore, deare Lady, be wise: God hath taken the yoake from your necke, trusted you with liberty, given you a Summer, to provide against Winter; O make up soundly your peace with God. Consider your infirmities, in time of temptation escaped: Consider these, sithence your deliverance; judge them in yourself; fly to Christ, not only as made of God, your Justifier from the guilt of sin, but your Sanctifier from the blot of it. Pray him earnestly, to save you from the daily power of these evills, which still you find to have dwelling in you. You have need, like the Ant, to gather in the Summer, when God trusted you with health & liberty; the rather, because God holdeth a flinging Rod over you, the Lash whereof, should it light on a Conscience.
Science naked, stripped of his favour, would seeme unsupportable. Thinke with your selfe, what joy you can take, when God shall visit you, if your Conscience shall tell you, that you have had good purposes, but neglected to execute them; that you have drawne nearer to God, but without due care to sanctifie him in your spirit, in his Ordinances, and profit by them: That you have not advanced his glory in your family as you ought; that you have borne too gentle a hand over the lusts of your heart, favouring your selfe too much in them: that you have in anger too much exceeded, and made them feel it most, whom you should most have tended. Thinke, I say, what comfort you can have in such things remembred. But if you will awaken your selfe, judge your soule, hold Christ to give you strength against those and all other corruptions; then shall light arise in darknesse, you shall find it true, though for the pre-
present you feele a warfare, that light is sowne for the righteous; though evills come, God will be your shadow at your right hand, to refresh you in them, peace shall dwell with you in life and death, which I wish your Ladiship in Jesus Christ. If I seeke to your L. to use greater freedome in dealing with you, the perswasion I have of your sincerity and soundneffe imboldeneth me thereto; sound flesh feeleth no griece, when we handle it somewhat hardly: but it is a signe an ulcer is bred in that flesh, which may not indure any fort to be touched. Nevertheless, I thank God, I have used to my knowledge, no liberty and plainnesse, to which fidelity doth not inforce me.

Thus craving your L. to take these things downe deeply, though they should make sick for the time, seeing that they aime at nothing but your spirituall health, & praying the Lord for you, who blesteth all Physicke, both corporall and spirituall,
Concerning a Wife's sickness.

spiritual, and health by it, I take my leave.

Loving Brother, we do remember you and my Sister, and are truly affected toward you, though my distractions, employment, and I know not what indisposition (which I dare not every way a-vow) do cause me to write more rarely. Now I can defer no longer from signifying our remembrance, and advertising you how things go with us, lest you should challenge me hereafter, as not informed. My most Christian Wife (your Sister) hath, since Easter last, beene very ill, and it hath not pleased God to bleffe any means which she hath attempted here, or else-where. Since our last parting with you, she continued till within this fortnight, crafe, but not feeling any violent working of our infirmities: but now of late, and especially this weeke, her strength is more than ordinarily enfeebled, that I fear (refer-
Mourning acceptable to a Christian.

(referring to God whatsoeere courses make with his glory) you shall not long in joy such a Sister, nor I such a Wife, of whom I am unworthy. Which I suggest for two reasons: The one, that you might remember her estate more fervently than otherwise; again, that you might seasonably resort to her, if it will any whit increase your contentment, as it shall be glad some to us whencesover, to enjoy your presence. The Lord teach us to number our daies, that wee may apply our hearts unto wisedome, and the Lord give us understanding, which may make our hearts be as well pleased in the house of mourning, as the fooles are in the house of carnall rejoicing. Brother, our terme lasteth not alwaies, the Lord make us wise to know the acceptable time, and while it is called to day, not to be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne, but to turne to him, and for a farewell, when you see how your cli-
Counsell car'd for in necessity.

ents wait at your Chamber dores, seeking to gaine earthly inheritances, how much more should wee waite at the dore of Wisedomes house, which will give us an everlasting inheritance? Readethe 8. of the Proverbs, the end of the Chapter, where the Lord seemeth to make this allusion: I will tell you, if we that are the Lords, come to be sifted, we shall be more diligent this way. Counsell is not cared for (as you know well) till some flaw be found in evidences: when once there groweth question, then the learned Counsellour groweth in request: so because our conscience maketh no question of that great estate in the heavens, therefore we waite not on Gods mouth daily, both in using meanes publike and private with diligence. Thus your Sister and I, doe remember our selves unto you, and my Sister, (to whom you may commend us) and take our leaves abruptly.
10. Consolatory.

Owing Cousin, I would be glad to hear how God doth carry on your weake frame, but this is a thing, which though I may wish easiely, yet I cannot so easiely effect it. If weake grow on you, it must comfort you, that your prison is not strong enough to hold your soule long imprisoned. How welcome is the evening to the wea-ry labourer? So to us should be the shade of death, in which we rest from all our travell. If you finde paine, seek for that faith which may quench the fire, if it be good for you that it should be suddenly quenched, if otherwise, looke to him who hath promised in fire and water to be with us, never to leave us, nor for sake us. Thinke on his goodnesse, who will have sinfull men ease their enemies beasts, un-der the burden which oppresseth them. Looke finally to those glori-ous joies, to which these momenta-ry afflictions shall bring you. Even
Death though painful, yet & c.

as the waters fall downe, not able to abide in grounds that lie high, to the sense of these afflictions goeth away from minde, that are lifted up in such contemplation. Above all things rejoice, that yet you shall shortly attain your love, your Lord, to whom your soule by faith hath beene long contra-

Et. Shee is a sorrie Spouse, who cannot make a shift with an uneasie horse, while shee rideth to see the consummation of her love, with her betrothed Husband. Doth together with weakness and paine, poverty in things spirituall, doth any desertion molest you? Know that this is but the wisedome of our God; who, as Physicians doe mingle many things in the same potion, so doth intermeddle many matters in the same temptation, that it may be more effectuall to his glory and our good. Thinke with your self, a wise Physician will not put in his prescript a Dram too much; God will not exceed
We must rest on God in necessities.

exceed that quantity any whit which is fit for his patients. Hold you to the rocke, and stand still, the things are clouds which will ride over you, and goe away: though it be night, we shall have day againe. Who is it that feareth the Lord? If hee be in darkness without light, let him cleane on the Lord his God. For conclusion; Doth outward necessity, with her threatening, any thing disturb you? Looke to him who taught St Paul to want, who made him say, he would doe all things, while his Lord strengthened him. Looke to him who circumciseth hearts with circumcision not made with hands, who can make us so deny our selves, that wee shall finde no paine to follow him: Be sorry for nothing, but that having such a Father, you should be carefull. We sanctifie our Heavenly Father, when no unbelieving feare commeth neere us. You know the truth of my love to you, and I know
know how easily I can (through God's blessing) procure that which would refresh you seasonably. Wherefore if you should not impart it to mee timely, before the oyle and meale be quite spent, you shall neglect a good meanes, which God's providence doth shew you, you shall be wanting to your owne comfort, you shall require mee with no small unkindness. Thus with my loving Sisters commendations, I commit you to God.

Yours as his owne,
Paul Bayne.

II. Expostulatory.

God Sr. C. Were my ability and freedome from occasions at this time, such as might be wished, I would see you in person, and not visit you by writing: but love must be content to creepe, when shee cannot goe at liberty as she desireth. Sr. C. could I bethink me
God afflicts his as a Father.

me of my cordiall, or other thing which were like to ease your sicke passion, should I not be a Traitor for ever in friendship, if at this time I should hold my peace? So is it, I could not beare(even in my conscience) too much blame, if thinking of some things which may serve to the good both of your body and soule, I should containe my selfe and not impart them. Wherefore good Sr. C. give mee leave a little to commune with you now being under the hand of God: For even skillfull Physicians, when themselves are visited, will use the advice of their inferiours. You know better than my selfe, that ordinarily in all afflictions God doth offer himselfe as a Father to us, chastening us, that hee may make us partakers of holinesse, yea, even by death it selfe hee doth chasten his, that they may not be judged with the unrepentant world. Thus I doubt not, but he doth with you. If then wee are under Gods chastening
We must mourn for sin in affliction.

chastening hand, we must first labour to take the heart of our faults, for which our heavenly Father doth take us in hand. Secondly, we must seek his mercy in forgiving them, and removing the temporary correction, so far as may stand with his glory. Thirdly, we must be careful to seek the use of them in all things following, if God shall think good, to raise us, and trust us with longer time in this present life. You know that it is the part of a natural ingenious child to grieve for that, whereby he hath provoked his earthly parents displeasure, and shall it not be our duties much more toward our heavenly? Till we know and feel our sickness somewhat grievous, we cannot affectionately seek that Physician. We count him our friend, who warneth us of something growing on our bodies, which we could not discern of ourselves. Take it, I beseech you, as my best love, if I present...
prefer to your considerations some things which I take to have beene the chiefe infirmities of your soule.
All our hearts are by nature full of spirituall adultery, wee love the pleasures and pomp of this world, and let them carry away from God, our most lively and tenderest affections. Now if a man of true honour would challenge himselfe, should he be but false in love to his earthly associate? How much more should it grieve us, who have let our hearts play false with our heavenly Husband? Againe, should one keepe their heart to their Love in some sort, but not care to come into the undefiled bed, in which their most neere benevolence is mutually imparted; were it not a strange disloyalty in persons married one to the other? What then shall we thinke, who by profession married to God, have not cared for partaking in the ministery of the Word, which is the Bridall-bed, wherein by his spirit;
spirit, he doth communicate with our soules his sweetest favours, and maketh them be conceived with fruit of righteousness, to everlasting life. Abanah and Pharpar were as good waters as Jordan: but it pleased not God in them to heale Naamans leprosie, but in Jordan. It pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching, to save all who shall believe. Lastly, if you have made the sinnes of others yours by communicating in them, and not reproving and reforming them when you had power, (as the sinnes of servants in house with you,) you must take knowledge of this, and let it grieve you: when you have friends comming to you, you will have your servants not onely serve you, but be respective to them, carefull that they by no rudenesse doe give them distaste. How then should it grieve us to think, that we have not cared, so we have been served to our minds, how our God hath been neglected,
Gods children more griev'd for, &c.

yea, provoked? Now considering these things, and those of like nature, which you are privy to within your selfe, seek to God in the death of your Christ, for the removall of them, of the sin chiefly; of the correction, so farre as hee shall see good. Ungodly men are like Pharaoh, who bade Moses pray to God to take the plague away: but Gods children like David, they fly to the multitude of Gods tenderest mercies, to take away their sinne. You may come with boldnesse to that mercifull God in Christ, who faith, that though a man would not take a wife once put away for adultery, yet he will receive his people, even after their adulteries; if they seek to him repentantly. It is a folly to strive to get loose from sickness, if we first seek not to have release from sinne. To breake the Gaole without being acquittted by the Judge, is no true liberty. To see the Sergeant, without compounding with the Creditor, cannot make
make sound peace. Lastly, I do intreat you to seek the use of God's visitation before all things. However hee shall deal with you, hee who hath commanded sinfull man to joyne instruction with correction, hee who hath taught man that he will not beat a Dog, but he will put it into his senses as well as hee can, what it is for which he striketh him. He, I say, will not faile to teach you, why his hand is on you, and make you profit by it. This is the seale that God hath ordained us, and called us according to his purpose of bringing us to life, when all things, even those evills of crosses, turne to our spirituall good. His Fatherly skill doth not make these Viper-like evills into wholesome triacles, for any, but his chosen children. If you finde these things, rejoyce: For God hath revived in your soule an eternall life, yea, he will restore you to this temporall life, if it be good. The issues of death are with our God, and what
Feare not death since Christ tasted it.

what is it for him to heale you being sicke, who did give to believing persons, their dead to life againe, when it made for his glory? If not, you know, a sick body will not feare to drinke that his Physician doth taste before him: Christ hath tasted death before us; to deliver us from the feare of it: yea, you know that your life is hid with God in Christ (who is the roote of us that beleeeve on him) even as the life of a Tree, this Winter time, is hid in the roote of it. The Lord comfort you in these things, and thus let mee for this time end,

12. Monitory.

D Eare Sr, I thanke God, I doe remember you, as I am able, unto him, intreating him to stand by you in all things, and finish your course with comfort. Remember the fore-passed experiences which you have had of his kindnesse and constancy toward you: he will not leave & forsake you now you have most
Mans extremity, Gods opportunity.

most need of him. Men often, like to these Swallowes, will be with us in Summer, but leave us in Winter. The Divell, when he hath drawne his into the briars, will give them leave to looke for themselves: But God hath ever stood nearest to his, when their exigencies have beene greatest. Mans extremity is his opportunity. That which God hath done once for you, in sustaining, quickning you, quieting your spirit, his peace, which passeth all understanding, keeping of it, that hee will doe every day unto you, if you will enforce your selfe toward him. It is no more paine to him to helpe us, than it is unto the Sun to lend light to us. If we have in some fits, found ease by this or that, wee know if wee come into like case, how to helpe our selves: it is wee say, but doing such a thing, or taking such a matter: thus having once found in deadnesse, fainting of spirit, quicknance and strength by recourse to our God in Christ, and wrestling
wrestling with him, wee should know what to doe when such like state returneth on us. Well Sir, a-while, & for ever: The Lord strengtheneth us, that though we be led into darkness without light, yet wee may lean to him, and call on his name. If a child have his father by the hand, though he be in the dark, yet he is not afraid: so is it with us, while by the eye of Faith wee see that invisible one at our right hand to support and save us. I pray you commend me to my good friends about you. Though I am called more on for writing, than my strength can well afford, yet I cannot forget you over long. Now I commend you to the grace of that faithful Shepherd, who will beare us when we are weary, strengthen us when weake, keep us against the Wolfe, yea, not lose us, but according to the will of his Father, raise us up at the last day; to whom be glory for ever: farewell,

Yours in Christian affection, P.B.
13. Citatory.

My beloved Friend, now the throng is gone; so that neither we can excuse any longer our not inviting, nor you your not coming when you are called on. You know what words did passe betwixt us, farre be it that they should prove wind. I doe accomplish mine in requesting you to visit us, you shall discharge your promise, when we in joy you present. We know that you have not wanted altogether intreaties to this purpose: we come after preferring the same suit more vehemently, not quite out of hope to speed: the latest Dog sometime taketh up the Hare. My wife will (if you be so pleased) meet you at Ware, when you set forward, that you may know with what devotion she entertaines your comming. All our waies are in the hand of God, hee teacheth us to commit them to him, that they may be directed. We
In all our waies we must feare God.

We may go here and there, change aire and company, but the God of all consolation is hee from whose meere mercy in his Christ wee receive all our comfort: chearefulnesse of heart is his gift to those that are good in his eyes. The Lord put his feare in our hearts, that we may never depart from him leaving the way of his commandements; and give us more and more his feare before us, in all our waies. For if it be a spot in feasts, to eate and drink without feare, as Jude faith; sure it is likewise a spot, in our journeyes. The first lines, are to provoke you to come; these are to guide you in comming, that your way may be prosperous; which I wish you from my heart, with all other spirituall blessings, for Christ's sake, accursed for us.

Write to us, when and how you will contrive your journey. Fare you well.

Yours in the Lord,

Paul Bayne.
Concerning the education of &c.


Owing N. A word in time, is better than many out of season, when it is too late: I have talked with my wife, and I finde it true: *Plus vident oculi quam oculus:* two are better than one. My wife is in love very carefull of your weale, and for the party to which one might most probably incline, her thoughts are not without reason adverse. First, the education of Gentlewomen of that sort, doth teach them little to know, but gallancy in apparell, to call for service about themselves. If they may come where they may have comforts to play a game at Maw while they are vacant from their attendance. Againe, for seeds of Religion, you cannot groundly conjecture them in her, which is the principall thing you would secure your selfe of: for good natures without Religion, are as we say of the Di-vell, good onely while they are pleased, and when you found it enough
Godly jealousy of our selves profitable.

enough to keepe any duty to God, with the help of a Religious yoke-fellow, how can you conceive hopes this way, if you want such a helper? Thirdly, her portion is but a little for your estate and calling: God gave you matter of estate equalling to hers, when you were many wares by many degrees unequall to your selfe. Againe, it is by supplements of good will to be made up, which may occasion secret courses of recompence. Think of these things: for though I pitty your condition, yet I wish from my heart, there may be no more haste than speed: soft sife maketh sweetest mault. Labour to have your selfe in feare and jealousy, and marke the secret folly of heart, with maketh us feast over our mourning part before God, and linger after the house of laughter. If sickle bod axe should slip onely, and let away the bitter potion, calling for restoratives, the disease should further and further be cherished: so
Love & hatred are not in our power.

our sickle soules, if they leave their wormewood-draught too timely which wee should take next our heart, wee shall misc a great furtherance of our soules health. I againe often thinke, it is not beauty, but Gods blessing, which must give you contentment, and love and hatred are not in our power; if wee had our moneths mind served, we are subject to grow into dislike with that wee so highly desired, as the story of Amnon & Thamar doth witness. Again, if you finde your minde any thing impotently running hither and thither (as the spirit of man knoweth the things of man;) bee afraid of having the thing you so desire, lest it prove as the Quales which stancke in the mouthes of them that lusted after them. I pray you therefore, strive with your owne soule for more godly sorrow and weanednesse of minde: Deliberate slowly, and then you shall be able to accomplish boldly, expecting from
from God a blessing of those ways which you have commended to him.

I have great business. Our Metropolitan visitation cometh shortly, and I am warned to preach, besides many other occasions. Yet because I love not after wisdome, I doe make way by force, to send you in time a word by friendly admonition.

We doe with our best hearts bid you farewell.

15. Consolatory.

SIR, Your Letter came in the chiefeft of our harvest, since the time, the first weeke, you know our Carrier goeth not. I can no longer be wanting to my duty so farre, as to leave your letter unanswered. Thus I passe to that clause, touching your late trial. I do desire to have some feeling of your estate; and the Lord that keepeth his, when they are almost lost in themselves, keep you in this and all other temptations. We have
great neede of God, to leade us, in time of triall: there are many by-waies, at which our corruption and weakenesse will be ready to start out; and but onely one true way, which will bring us to see a good issue, in Gods season. Sometimes wee are in danger, as hath beene taught us, to let light by Gods corrections, and play hide-bare with him; thinking well, if wee can ward off the smart in any fashion: sometime we are impatient, outwardly and apparently kic-king at the spurre; like these plunging Horses, which will not endure their Rider: sometime inwardly and secretly repining and fretting, like those Horses, which digest their choler, by biting their bridles. If wee neither despise, nor impatiently rise against the hand of God, yet our weakenesse is ready too much to take to heart that which is our exercise, so that our spirit drooperh and fainteth; and this is worse, because it is commonly ac-
accompanied.
but one good way, to a good issue.

compounded with a wilfull and indisposition, which will not let us receive such things, by which we might be truly comforted: as in Jacob, who would not be comforted, but followed his sonne to the Grave, mourning. I doubt not, but God keepeth you both from the former; I hope, from this latter also. We must take our correction, and humble ourselves under the smart of it; but we must looke to Christ, that hee would not let our faith, hope, and meekness of minde, be shaken. If God should have told you both; I will give you two children, you shall bring them up so long for mee, and I will take them againe; would you not have accepted it gladly? The event doth tell you no lesse, than if he had before-hand thus spoken unto you. God is the chiefe Father of all the Families in Heaven and Earth; we are but foster-parents to our owne children. When my last childe was taken to God, my good friend, our Preacher,
Preacher, did sometime shew mee many Motives, why I should beare it equally.

First. That they, taken thus soone, are crowned through Christ, without having experience of that sight, which maketh us cry, O miserable, &c. and thinke our lives of-ten a burthen to us.

Secondly, It is not love to them, when we are perswaded, that God is their God, which maketh us grieve at their taking hence: it is selfe-love, or carnall affection: For Christ told his Disciples, If yee loved me, yee would be glad, because I goe to the Father. And what measure doe wee offer God, who can send our children farre from us, where wee are never like to see them againe, if they may doe well with man, and yet cannot well beare to have them taken out of sight by the Lord, though wee are perswaded their spirits are with him? Wee must Labour for such good hearts, as may not be content
perforce to let him take, but may willingly yeeld, even our children (if it were by sacrificing them with our owne hands) to him who hath not thought his only Begotten too deare for us, but hath given him to death for our sakes. If God should have riven the Tree asunder, I meane, severed you one from another, it must have been taken thankfully; but much more when hee leaveth the Tree, and taketh but the fruit, yea, but part of that, lea-ving the one halfe yet with you.

Thirdly, and lastly, It is a token wee felt not his love, nor received them not from his hand, as wee ought to have done, if wee should not thankfully give them backe to him. Anna receiving Samuel as a gift gotten by petition from God, did readily part with him to God againe; so Abraham with his seed, which by Faith in the Promise hee had obtained. I know we are ready to think these things are true; but a Parent-like affection cannot easily shake
We must love God better than, &c.

shake hands with, and yeeld up things so dearely beloved. It is true indeed, that while we pleade love to our children, what unkindness do we bewray toward God; if my heart did not so love them, I could give them thee? Calmly to thinke on this, which yet is contained in that Exception above named, were able to make one blushe, that his heart should be so cold in his love to God-ward, as not willingly to part with any thing it loverh, at Gods call: alas, to yeeld that wee greatly care not for, is no Godamercy. But I hope, Gods love doth not make his hand grievous; neither would I have thus late written thus much, but that it is good to be pro-
vided against all things to come. For as when fire catcheth, wee see how farre it is gone, but know not where it will lay; even so it is, when the fire of affliction (in which Faith is proved) is once kindled. The second messenger told not Job all his sorrow at once: it is wise-
dome
We must thank God for the, &c.

done still to provide for the worst, the best will save it self.

16.

My beloved Friend, and Christian Sister, if I my selfe had been a good Scribe, you should not have been thus long unwritten to: My affection to your deceased Mother, who did request it at my hand, and the love I bare your selfe, would long since have enforced it; but my hand cannot doe, what my heart would. Neverthelesse, feeling my selfe not like to live to see your face, I have got the help of anothers hand, to report what my heart doth speake unto you, out of that Christian love which bindeth us to consider one another, and provoke one another to love. I may thanke God for those good things, which I know his grace hath done in you. For the conscionable reverence of your deceased Parent, was of him, who writeth in the heart that commandement of honouring the Parent,
rent, as well as others. A grace which God, who worketh it, hath promised to crowne with much prosperity. Other things also persuade me of your piety; but God will teach you to know the things bestowed on you: neither are we much to harpe on this string, unless we were in conscience assured, that it were needfull to strengthen each other with signes of a good estate; as the Physicia s doe on heartles Patients, with repeating good tokens of recovery. Yet we that are taught of him, to see ought that his grace doth in us, must bless him; and strangers by, who by a spirit of discerning observe the same, must joyne with us in thanksgiving. I will leave therefore this matter, and take occasion to stirre you up to duty to your heavenly Father, whom I know to have been dutifull of conscience to earthly.

First, you must labour to know your God; and in Christ, your mercifull Father: for we by nature are like
We must know God, our Father.

like runnagate children, who have never kept neere their Parents house; or like the Prodigall, which left his fathers house, and betooke him to Harlots: so our hearts have left our God, and know nothing by nature, but the things of this world, with which we commit spiritual Harlotry. Now there is none by nature, that seeketh after God. But wee that doe in Christ, find him in part, must more and more grow up, in the acknowledging of him. What a graceless part would we condemn it in for ourselves, if we should not know our Parents here (as by pride and heedlesse rudenesse, some children will not) much more should wee be ashamed, not to take notice of our heavenly Father? Nay, we must the more cry after him, the more blessedness we know there is, in rejoicing of him: as the children that taste the sweetnesse of the loving Parent, cry when they seem to be left. But if you aske how you may know?
know? I answer: First, you must get your eyes wiped, the eyes of your minde: Secondly, you must know where to seeke him. Our eyes are sore, and full of scales: and therefore, if men be carefull to have the eyes of their body dressed, yea, indure sharpe waters, rather than their sight should faile; so much more must wee seeke to God, for the Eye-salve of his Spirit, the one-
ly Clary that cleareth sille sights: Yea, welcome Gods Afflictions, which are his strong Waters, to restore our Seeing.

Now could you see, and knew not where to finde him, you were never the better. Therefore you must know this, that if you will seeke him, you must looke at Christ his Sonne, in whom the Father is, for they are one. When a childe is like the Parent, wee say, If you see such a one, you see his Father, for he is the same up and downe as his Father was. But Christ is liker the Father, than any childe the na-
turall
We must love God, and why.

For the selfe-same All-seeing spirituall God, who in fellowship of his Person, hath a Soule and Body glorified, the same spiritual Nature is the Nature of the Father: as if the same Soule and Body which is in you, were communicated with the person of your childe. Secondly, as you seek to know him more, so you must seek to love him and please him in all things, being more fruitful in serving him, than you have been: And good reason, Love is the whetstone of Love. If you should to love one, as to give your little Son to death for his sake, would you not thinke it an intolerable part, not to be considered with love again? Yet God so loved us, that hee gave his onely Begotten; that wee believing in him, should not perish, but have life eternall. And for our children, Do we not looke, though they be full of play when they are young, yet, that being better growne, they must learne some honest
honest calling, which may do them good another day? So the Lord, though he have a gentle hand over us, while we are tender; yet doth looke, that wee afterwards should be more fruitfull and serviceable to him, *Job* 12. 2. The righteous are compared to Trees; which, when first planted, beare few, but grow till they come to carry many branches. Now, if you would try your love, you must finde it out by its working. What contentment you take in that Presence, which is to be had by Faith; what longing you have to be with God; what love to his tokens; what love to children, and friends. As for example: Loving your Husband above all men, there is none whose presence you care for, or take contentment in, like his. So faith the faithfull soule to God; What have I in Heaven but thee? What in Earth, in comparison of thee? Againe, if your Husband were in some other Country, how would you long for his returne
tune unto you, or that you might follow him? So the loving soule to God, faith; Oh, who shall deliver mee from this body! Oh, it is best for mee to be with Christ! Shee would goe to him. I looke for the appearance of the great God, who shall make my body like his glorious Body, by the Power which subdueth all things. If two truely loving were contracted, would not every weeke seeme a yeere, till the Wedding? Wee are by Faith contracted to God, in Christ: how should we long to see our Marriage solemnized? Endeavour to please him, grieve if ought crosse your loving Husband. A Letter from a friend, we love, and set by it: If we have a Token, how we keepe it, and are glad of it? So the Word of God, which is his Letter, Oh! how glad is the soule, that loves the God of it? I rejoiced in thy Statutes, more than in all Wealth. So the Sacraments, which are the Pledges of him selfe to us, these
Wee love not God as we ought.

these are the love-tokens hee sendeth to us, while wee are absent from him in the body. Lastly, by loving his Children, and friends. You loving your Husband, thinke his friends welcome, and love them. Could you thinke one loved you, and loved not your sonne? So they that love him that begetteth, love him also who is begotten, 1 John 5:1. Now then, let us not be false to our owne hearts, and wee may confesse that wee want a great deale of love to our God: for, when are we glad at the heart, and rejoice in our God? When do we long after his appearing? Nay, God is faine to smoake us forth of this World with many trialls, and yet wee will not arise, and come away in our affection. When are wee heartily joyfull to heare his voyce, and receive his tokens? When doe wee busie our head to please him? and when doth it cut us at the heart, if hee be offended? Now then; if you see you want it, what
Therefore we must take shame to, &c.

what must you doe? You must shame your owne heart within your selfe, and say; What a wretch am I! If my heart could be glad of every strangers company, and were dead within me, not joying in my Husbands presence; were busie about other things; negligent to my Husband; longed for other men; never wished to see him, if absent: what a shamefull part were this in me? Yet thus it is: my soule is married to thee (Lord,) thou hadst no Dowry with me, but beggerie, and spirituall filthinesse, yet thou boughtest mee deare, and haft put mee in no lesse than Heaven, for my Joynture; and yet loe, I can finde a contentation, and be merry at this or that earthly thing; I can long to have earthly matters, which I lack; I can be carefull how to please man, and be grieved, when ought doth crosse his liking; but am lacking in them all, toward thee. Then seeing this, and how your heart is full of Harlotry, 

G love
Get love to God, and get every thing.

love to creatures, you must cry to God; Lord help me, parea way this selfe-love, and false love to the creature, and make me love thee; Lord, draw me after thee, and I shall follow thee as fast. And strengthen your selfe in faith, and God will give it you: for this is his promise, I will circumcise your hearts, and make you to love mee with all your hearts: Get this, and you get every thing. This will make that which is irksome to the flesh, be meate and drinke to you, and delightfull. Is not the Nurcery of the Childe, a homely piece of worke? Yet, because the Mother loveth it, though her sleepe be broken, and her hand foiled, shee undergoeth it gladly. And not onely doth it constraine us, but make us patient. What will not a wise woman beare, and pocket patiently from a Husband she loveth? Now one thing more I will warne you of, and end; and that is a good meane of the former. Whilst you live,
live, learn to weane you selfe from the things of this world; let him that buyeth, marrieth, &c. For hee who immoderately loveth the things of this world, as Pride, Profit, and Pleasure, the love of the Father is not in him. Shee that hath loved one man truly, she is sped, as we say; she can love no more Husband, Children, Possessions; much lesse the proud vanities and riotous Gossippings of these Times. As an honest Woman must flye the Stewes, so must we not have our hearts scene among these things. And this is more easie to my eafelesse flesh, that God gave me meanesse of minde, and neglect of such carnall courses, in which I might have had my share, that I wish all my Christian friends may receive that grace from him, which I try by experience to have so precious effect. The Lord keepe you.

G 2 17. Lo-
Loving N. I received your Letters; in which you signify the consummation of that, which I wish prosperous. The ground of all prosperity, is God's blessing: without which, every thing is a deadly poison to us; whether it taste bitter, as crosses; or sweet, as the more successful issues of things; whether it kill with painfull gripings, as evills; or cast asleep, and move laughter, as those things do, which in themselves are to be esteemed outward blessings. The poisons spirituall, for taste and effect, carry no lesse than corporall. Now the ground of blessing in all things, is Jesus Christ, our Redeemer, bearing our Curse for us, (Gal. 3. 13.) and swallowing our deserved Cup up, into an unsuffred blessing. I hope the eye of your soule looketh up to him, who was lifted upon the cursed Cross, to heale that Curse, wherewith Sinne and the Divell, that old Serpent, have stung us. Againe,
We must submit to God's yoke.

gaine, I doubt not, but your Wives prayers (who is now departed) are on record in Heaven, and your Sisters prayers (who still liveth) are not in vaine before him, who is a God hearing prayer: Both have wished you blessednesse, through Jesus Christ. I would have beene wish you before this Letter, but that God hath let my wives weaknesse to be more than ordinary. We must take up our Crosses, and when God biddeth us yoke, hee is the wifefl man that yeeldeth his necke most willingly. This hath made me stay hitherto; but the Lord ealing his hand, I resume my purpose, of satisfying your desire, and meane to follow my Letter at the heoles. The Lord make it prosperous. You tell mee a loving Tale, of bringing up your Wife, to enter her into my acquaintance. If you had no Brother at Cambridge, it were pity my Sister should be no sooner a Wife, than a Widow. You know the Law of the first yeere.
The God of Love give you holy love in him, and keep the fire in, when it is kindled. I hope I shall never forget my Christian duty to you, of being a helper to your faith; it shall go hard, when I help you not with a short Curry of matter to this purpose. My Wife remembers you and her Sister to God; and let my love rest with you, till God give me leave to see you. Farewell.

18.

Loving Cousin, I have a cold spirit, who shew thee no more love: but beare with mee in this Winter of mine, and if ever the Son of Righteousnesse be pleased to make Summer with me, no one, without my selfe, shall have more interest in the fruits I then shall be taken with. It may be, the thred of your life shall be drawne out so farre, as to see these words prove workes; which the Lord haften. How goeth the matter with your poore soule? how doth it get up?
Incentives to Devotion.

How is it made ready every morning? How walketh it all the day, when it is once with the solemnity of Devotion dispatched? Doth the eye of the soul wake without matter, like that heavie matter which in some eyes and heads (too much stuffed) is often discerned? You may know if it be clear;

First, it will see God in his Christ, through the glass of his Word, and it will at ease hold waking before him. If you thus wake, you have the start of me, my shop-windows are longer in opening, than methinks I see you in making ready. Sometimes the mist of my own darkness, sometimes earthly humors doth choose into them; sometimes a spirit of slumber and slord doth offer to close them; sometimes clouds of spiritual darkness doth over-cast them: so that, though they are waked, and in themselves lightsome, yet they see nothing, by reason of that obscuritie which is without them,
wherewith they are environed: as it is with a man that sitteth with his eyes wide open, in a Roome, where neither light of Sunne nor Candle commeth. Now, while a man is flying to Christ, to get the inward dimnesse of his fight cleared, (for he can make his Clay and Spittle heale them) while hee getteth the distillation of by-thoughts stopped, by looking to him who unites our hearts to himselle, who worketh all our workes for us; while hee seeketh to that quickning Spirit, to scatter his flummer, and laboureth him, who is Light it selfe, to expell those externall darknesses environing him; while one man is tasked with this work, another, not thus molested, is ready, and hath dispatched. Well, our God doth accept it for one of his sicke servants fore-noone workes, to settle their clothes orderly about them. I mention these things, to lend you some light; by which, you may better see your privilege, who
who are not forced to spend your strength in such a fashion. But the man that is well waked, must have moving, as well as sense returned. How doe the affections of your heart feed it to Christ, in way of thankfulnesse, who hath led you all your daies? who is that Prince, that maketh peace in you; whose secret, is the strength of your heart, that it flainteth not; whose favour is that Shield, which doth so cover you, that evills have no leave to affaile you, much lesse to prevale against you? Is your heart, in the conscious understanding of any benefit, affectionate toward him? Then you are truly awake, and lighsome, like to passe that day without too much weariness, which is with so fresh a spirit entered: then that Sunne of Righteousnesse hath got you up. For as a greater fire draweth forth a lesse, and as the Sun bodily rising daily over us, doth draw forth the spirits of sense and moving, which are in
The bodily creature; so doth that light and life of Israel, by his work, though not perceived, draw forth this spiritual motion of the life of God in us, whereby we discern him, and in thankfulness we make towards him. When your soul is now awaked, what doth it wash with, what doth it put on? As we Christians have both guilt and deformed blot of sinne, so we have a daily laver, even blood and water; for our Christ came in both, to teach, that he came not onely to make atonement for the guilt of sinne, but doth also cleanse us by his Spirit, from the spot of corruption. Now then if you looke at that great God, as your Righteousnesse, by faith on his blood, shied with sense of the curse due to our sinne; and if you looke to Christ, who is made of God your Sanctifier, to cleanse you from those inherent spots daily, then you have washed in the Fountaine opened for Israel, and are so clean-
fed (have you but once washed in this kinde) that you shall never be defiled throughout againe, as Christ speaketh. Nevertheless, there must be Raiment upon the Soule, yea, it must be clad with compleat Armour, for it is compassed with enemies, and the life of it is a warfare. Now, when wee looke to Christ by faith, as our Sanctifier and Salvation, then we are thus clothed: he is our Sanctifier, who must bring all our graces from one degree to another, making that light of holinesse, that image of himselfe the second Adam, grow up in us, as the light of the mor- ning, till it cometh to the strength, taketh increase. Hee must be our Viceroy, tread Satan under our feet, dissolve his works, crush the head of him for us, hee must finish the worke of his Grace with his owne power. Well, when you are thus forward, how doth your soule walke, putting it selfe forth in action? doth it go limping? doth it rest and
and can goe no further, as weary?  
Doth it feare it shal not hold out?  
Is it made sad, with want of any thing? Many a good soule walketh thus, and puzzle them so, that they cannot goe on freely; but I hope, no earthly lusts fall about your feet, 
It may be it is weary sometimes, and is fearful; and is made sad, through some kinde of circumstance. Well, let us get conscience; what painfulnesse, what weaiynesse, what weakness, what fear doth attend us? Our spirits being once poore in the privity they have of these matters, shall no sooner looke with the eye of faith to Christ, but the matter shall be mended. Hee it is that maketh the lame to leape, like a Hinde; who enlargeth the heart, to run in the race of the Commandements. Looke to Him, the faithfull Shepherd, who taketh up the weary Sheepe, that through feebleynesse can go no further; to Him, to whom the casting of our eye is the renewing of our strength,
Christ the finisher of our Faith.

Strength. Against fear of persevering, challenge him as the author and finisher of your faith, reverently tell him, it is a piece of his Fathers will that he should not only give you to believe, and his Spirit for a time, but that he should raise you up at the last day. *Joh. 6:39.*

Finally, looke to your God, that hath said to *Abraham* and all believing seed of him, *Walk before me,* I am God All-Sufficient. Tell him you have nothing but himself, in heaven nor yet in earth, in comparison of him, and he cannot but supply with himself, every thing to you.

Thus the asking a question, which I did not thinke of, when I set pen to paper, hath drawne me on to matter not intended. I cannot now annexe the other, for my Letter is sent for. I have beene neither well this five weekes, nor yet sicke enough to make mee better.

The Lord be our daily strength, direction,
Gods children subject to sickness.

direction, blessing, comfort, and protection for ever.

M Y deare Friend, and Brother, in him, who is not ashamed to call us brethren, I cannot but salute you, and let you heare how it is with me: for I know, my lines cannot come to you more soone than welcome. I was scarce alighted from my horse, but an anguish distemper did seize on me, and follow me in manner of an Helltoke, to which I have a habitude, even in my best health. Beside, I have been troubled with such an inflammation of some of those interiora viscera, that I cold not sleepe two houres, but extremity of inward heats would awaken me. In which kind I went some five weekes, but now I thanke God, my body, though a little more bettered, is in such state as formerly it hath beene. For my soule, I still go on in yeares and months of labour, according as my Lord hath measured. I feel
such ignorance of God and all his
ways, so many years toward me,
such folly, which keepeth me from
taking anything to heart, which
respecteth God, or concerneth my
self, such uncircumcision of heart,
which maketh me that I cannot be
holyly poor and abject, though
conscious of innumerable motives,
past, present, eminent, which
might move me thereto: Lastly, I
feel such a Self-sufficiency, as
will not let me perceive what need
I have of my God to be with me,
for quickening, strengthening, com-
forting directing, prospering of me
in my course, though this breath
of our nostrils, is not more necessa-
ry to the being and continuing of
this bodily life, than is his blessed
presence, to the causing and main-
taining of all our comfort. These
things do renew their assault on
me every day, and notwithstanding
I renew daily my endeavour a-
gainst them, yet I cannot recover
such supply of Grace, as should
make
Sinne is weaken'd by degrees.

make mee walke more large this way. But hard lessons are not ea-

cily learned.

Sometime finding small effect, I am ready to thinke, my labour is

in vaine, but when I consider, all is

not in vaine, whose effect doth not

presently appeare: seede is long

time towne before harvest. Second-

ly, strength spirituall doth expell

spiritual corruption, as strength na-

turall sicke humors. Strength natu-

rall, if it be in fulnesse, it doth fi-

mul & femel purge out that matter

which is contrary to it: but if it be

in mediocrity, it doth expell so

farre, that though sicke matter still

remaine, yet it is lightened, and be-

commeth more tolerable to nature.

Neither is eating and drinking in

vaine, because we cannot so refresh

ourselves, but that hunger will still

returne on us. Sometime the fami-

liarity of it, doth make mee ready

to passe by it, nor moved at all a-

gainst it: even as things offensive
to nature at first, grow by custome
lefsse grievous. But I flee to God, who hath promised to put all en-
my in us against the seede of the Serpent, which we find to remaine
within us; I say to my Christ, as thou dost reach me this cup, like a
daily diet drinke, to make it wholesome to me. Sometime wearesnese
doeth surprise me: then I think of Israel, amongst whose temptations,
one was from the length of the way, even wearesnese of wandring.
I looke to Christ, and pray him to strengthen me, that I may follow
the March, that I may follow him whithersoever he leadeth. Then I
think when are men weary (being refreshed with sleep) to resume
their earthly affaires; I say with
my selfe, for what dost thou keep
me? for what dost thou refresh
me? O my Shepherd, thou hast no
other wooll nor milke from mee!
Againe, I consider how dangerous
it is to intermit, if when I have the
most fervent indeavours, I finde it
enough to walke weakely, what
would
We must not faint at our deadness.

would become of mee, were these neglected? Lord, inlarge my heart with thy strength, that I may suffer hardship like a good Souldier, without shrinking at it. I thinke you know the like things in deadness, but feare not, nor faint not, though wee be to that life of his, like as cold water and dry ashes are to heat, in which naturally, heat can never be fixed, yet when our God hath proved our faith and patience, he, who calleth the things that are not, as if they were, hee who calleth light out of darkness, will imprint in our soules, and make these things as fixed possesssions with us, which now like lightening are not more soone manifested, than vanished: His forbearance is but till the fittest time for him to give it, and us to receive it; the Lord make us, in the meane while, of understanding hearts.

We in outward things wish to be cured rather securely than speedily, neither would we have Sum-
The mis-carrying of a Letter.

In Winter, for the Winter is as necessary for the rooting of things, as the Summer to make things shoot forth with fruit smilingly.

Yours in Christian affection,
Paul Bayne.


My deare Friend, the heart-say of your welfare is to me most welcome. I was sorry that my letter mis-carried, but there can be no defect in any instrument, which doth not cadere sub electionem suprema artificis. If the fruit of our body prove abortive, we praise him, how much more must wee sanctifie his wise providence, when the like case falleth out but in a letter, which is such a birth of the minde, as may by a second conception be framed againe with advantage? I did write vnto you some things concerning my owne estate, how I found my heart in my visitation, what was my
my practice, even to compass those walls of darkness which I discerned in my self, and in silence and rest to wait on my God for his salvation in the downfall of them. I count it impertinent to rub up my memory in regard of that, I this way discourse, though in the circumstances I then used, it did be seeme my condition, and would have relish’d well to your understanding. A second branch of my letter concerned your self, and this uncomfortable deadnesse which againe you mention, the heads whereof I will labour to recall as I may, though I cannot reach that straine in which I found my selfe when I indited the former.

About this deadnesse of spirit, I did consider two things. First, the reasons for which God did let it hang about us. Secondly, the course wee were to take against it. The Lord doth it for many good ends. 1. That it may be a spur inciting us to goe forth to him, who
is the quickning spirit, that thus we might experimentally finde the quickning vertue of Christ, who doth lighten our eyes, and bring us out of these fits to feele our selves alive before him, could wee thirst, after the living God, did wee not suffer this defect of life. Men seeke not those things abroad, which they are full of at home. Hence it is, that when God will bring us to himselfe, as the foundation of this or that good, which he would comunicate, hee doth follow us with experience of the contrary in our selves, that being conscious how it is with us, wee might flie to him who is All-sufficient. Againe, we cannot experimentally know God to be in Christ a quickning spirit, should we not feele an intercourse of his death, and a powerfull expulsing of it from his vertue working in us. The more often the Patient growing into paine, is eased by Physicke, the more experimentally he seeth the Art of the Physician,
can and benefit of Medicine. Thirdly we have this remainder of death, that wee may better consider of our natural estate, how of ourselves we are wholly estranged from the life of God: for what we remaine in part, that we are wholly by nature.

Fourthly, that wee might the better helpe others in this temptation.

Fistly, that we might taste our life more sweetly, and preserve it more carefully: we find with pleasure that we seeke with paine. Sixtly, that we may know, and teach others how they must depend on God for the considering and moving of their grace daily, as well for the being and first producing of it. Lastly, that we may be led into the knowledge of our owne hearts, whether that worke is in them which will strive for life, as every thing that hath life, will struggle to part with it, or whether they will passe it over heedlesly and floth-
faithfully. Certainly if we make the working of our spirits, and course of God in such an evil law, we will learn out of it manifold wisdome. Now for the course wee are to take, it standeth, first, in resolving to encounter this diseaze, then in practising that we may be cleared of it: the Divell will be ready if we stirre this way to serve a Superfideas, sometime by suggesting that the nature of this is no such thing as may not be borne, it doth not waste the conscience, but such foolish patients, who will not venienti accurre morbo, they at length are paid home with paine, so much the more, by how much they have the longer delayed. In the body, let a man not expell the superfluity nature hath contracted, the quantity or acrimony of it will to increase, that he shall be forced to come to it with more paine, or there will be bred on him some painfull sicknesse. Let us strive to expell every such matter in our soules,
Satans suggestions in deadnesse, &c.

Soulies, we shall find in soules as well as bodies, Retentio excrementorum est parent morbi.

Secondly, it will be suggested, why, strive with it as we will, it will returne: Doe we cease to eate daily and refresh nature, because hunger and faintnesse doe still returne upon us? is it not a benedict to be eased for the present, to keepe downe an enemy, to do that which wee know will at length bring to perfect health, though wee cannot forth of hand be fully cured? Some-time wee thinke, it is not well it should be thus, but imployments will not let wee turne to it as I would, we could finde in heart to deale with it, but that wee cannot while it. But will a man not be at leisure to take Physicke for his body? what is worthy our time, if our soules life may not have it afforded? Againe, time is not lost which is spent this way, for God doth attend the time wee spend after confliction, with greater blessing,
How to resist deadness of spirit.

fing, and leavens the knowledge we gather, so that it becommeth affectionate and practicall, beside the wisedome which is to be learned, from observing the working of your soule under such a temptation. But when you have repelled such ligatures, by which the Di-vell would hinder the will from resolving resistance, in the next place, you must encounter this deadly passion by such a constant course as may free you from it.

The course standeth chiefly in a threefold practice. For, as we first ripen and prepare matters that the medicine may carry them away more easily, Medicandum est conc-ccltis, non crudis, &c. So here you must labour to hold your thoughts, and ponder upon this evil, considering what it is in itself, what effects it hath for present, what it threatneth, should not grace pre-vent.

In the next place, you must take downe the medicine; lay hold on H Christ.
The practice of resistance

Christ your life and quicknance. Your third practice must be to take a walk in some words of promise this way, which agitation of your soul does stirre up the supernatural heat of faith (as motion doth the natural) by which means we come to feel our medicine wrought, Christ sheweth himselfe more and more effectuall. To set you downe in breife an example; thus I concoct the thing, meditation preparing, Good Lord, what a state is this, what a bed-rid disposition doth hang about me! were my body an apoplexy, were I dead but of one side, it would go neere me: but to have my soul thus benummed, that I can neither find comfortable sense or motion in it toward things spirituall, how much more should it affect me? what ever I set upon, it is present with me, it maketh my duties as distastefull in themselves to thee, as deaded drink to the stomack: it keepest me from comfort for the present: and what doth it not
not threaten, if thy mercy should not prevent? yea, it is so much the more dangerous, by how much more conIatural, for I cannot take in this sleepe, and though it be so deadly, yet am no whit affrighted.

2. Alas, what shall I doe? To thee I looke, Lord, who bidst us awake, and promisest to lighten our eyes from this mist of death, with which they are over-shadowed, to thee who art the life and quickning spirit, to thee, in whom, as a root, my life is hid. How long shall I live in light, and complaine of darkness? How long shall I be within thee the fountain of life, and feele death so cumbersome to me? The stronger worketh on that which is weaker, and doth assimulate it to itself. Oh, display thy strength, and make his death flie before thee from forth of thy member.

3. Moving of faith. It is thy will our hearts should live who seck thee, yea, that wee should have life aboundantly, thou hast said, come to mee
and your hearts shall live, thou hast promised us, that we shall so drink of thy Spirit, that it shall flow from us abundantly. O strengthen mee, thou author and finisher of faith, to hold thee the rocke, till I see these waves of death, as it were, break themselves, and passe away.

In such like practice I have often found this shadow of death lying before me, I have alwaies found a peaceable rest, expectinge enlargement more confidently; when I have not found it eaising me for the present, yet it hath disposed me to receive quicknance afterward, as consistive bodies, though they have not alwaies easement when they offer, yet the offer doth facilitate the course, and dispose the body to easement after.

Thus out of love, I have a little lent you my selfe, the Lord blesse us with that spirit which prevaileth: The meane while I will desire that we both may watch in prayer, one for another.

Yours as his owne, P. B.
Be not over hasty to judge.

21.

Sir, you may think me a grave rather, in whom all your kindliness are buried, than a thankfull friend, to whom who so giveth, self-leth dearly, they say, so commodious to the donor the thing proveth which was freely bestowed. Nevertheless, your wildeome and love will not, I dare say, judge over hastily upon appearance, knowing well that as there may be a shew of good, yea, godliness, where there is not the substance and power: so there may be a semblance of evil, even of unthankfulness, where yet the vice itself doth not harbour. Your Nephewes last visiting you, was hid from mee, till about bedtime the night before he tooke his journey; assure your selfe, I could not have bin privie to his purpose, without setting my pen to paper, though I am none of the forwardest about this errand. I doe remember all your love, so doth he also who is most apprehensive of what is done.
done to him in his children and members. They use in Spain a powerfull speech to this purpose, that *who so wipeth the childes nose, kiseth the mothers cheeke*; so kindly naturall parents construe the homeliest offices done to their children: how then shall not he accept of all such dutie as is done to him in his children, whose love is such to his, that the wombe-love of the tenderest mother is farre inferiour. For my selfe, I cannot shew you any thankefull remembrance of you, better than by remembering you in those duties, which though they most concerne us, yet we are most subject to be forgetfull in them. Worldly wisedome doth teach men to see the benefit of health and wealth, yea, to have sagacitie for seeing what neede they may come to: when wee have so many good Husbands seeing these outward things, and providing against a raynie day, that no event may take them unprovided; the Lord...
Lord make us wise, to see the true wealth and health of our spirits for the present, and to prepare for our comfort against such times where-in the Lord shall try us. I will commune with you about these points, as God shall enable. Men, who would gather an earthly treasure, worldly wealth, must first make sure that their Penny be good Silver; that the things which they deal in be matters of worth: for counterfeit false commodities heaped up, deserve not to be called wealth, or treasure: and what is the wisdom of heavenly Merchants, but to seek good Pearles, right for their kinde; true Faith, such as purifieth the heart; true Repentance, such as is accompanied with change in heart, in conversion; true sanctifying Grace, such as maketh the heart honest; true fruits of righteousness, such as are through the helpe of Christ to the glory of God; these are things that make a man wealthy.
they shall not deceive us, but stand with us, as a treasure invaluable. A second thing I mark in getting earthly treasures is, that there must be a dayly diligent adding unto, and augmenting that wherewith we first began. Though a man hath good Gold and Silver by him, yet till he hath it in some quantitie, he is not said to be rich, or to have treasure stored by him. Thus it is with us; Rome was not built in a day, men are all their dayes in getting together a more compleat treasure. Thus wee Christians, though from our first believing we have unsearchable riches, yet, if we speak comparatively, we have not that wealth and consummate treasure, which we come afterwards unto, when now we have well run on in that race which is set before us. Wherefore give diligence to increase your Graces, which God of mercy hath begun. Let the righteous be more righteous, the holy more holy. If our Grace be true,
there will be a further access of Grace: Wealth goeth to wealth, even as stones do to a stone-heape, already mounted. Wherefore, let us every day draw one Line this way: let us count that an unprofitable day, wherein wee have not something laboured with our hearts for the fuller apprehension of our graces dwelling in us; that so poverty of spirit may dwell more and more in us, wherein wee have not somewhat enforced our hearts to stay themselves on the Lord and his precious promises: wherein wee have not called on our soules, to put themselves forth in more thankfull acknowledgement of that love, faithfulness, & patience, which we see doe follow us day by day. Finally, wherein we get not something done, which maybe as a good foundation, and further our reckoning, when we shall be accountant to God. We must be no more wea-rie of this, than earthly husbands are, of resuming their businesse:
The more grace we have, the, &c.

The sweetness and peace of those ways should affect us. Looke as men at first, while poverty doth pinch them, they seek wealth with much griefe and anxiety: but when once they have gotten well about them; then, fleshed with the fruit of their former labour, they make a play of following the World, to the increase of their substance: for they seek not so much out of indigency, as out of complacency and delight which they finde in their possessions. Thus wee Christians, when once wee have attained some first-fruits this way, we should with delight follow on to perfection.

A third practice, by which worldly wealth commeth in, is a carefull retaining what is once gotten. Good Rents, with little or no expence, are the surest Alchamy that ever was found out: whereas let in-comings be never so large, one back-door, nor looked vato, may bring the whole house to ruins. Wherefore wee must take heed of all such things.
things which waste and extinguish Grace in a manner, giving place to finne, so as to yeld to it, and lye downe under it. Otherwise he that stumbleth, and comes not down, gets ground: the trippings of Gods children, in which they recover themselves, bring them on with greater advantage. Again, we must take heed of dead companies, of formall performances, which are a Peale to Bed-ward. Finally, of running our selves into projects of worldly Pompe and profits, which are the common Choake-weed of Grace. Whose heart (almost) have not these Thornes over-growne? Thus you see how we may by the World learne a way to thrive in the best Wealth. Now I come to the latter point of preparation, where- by we may be able to stand in the house of Tryall. In this I will be shorter, my Pen being run forth be- yond my purpose in the former. The longest days have night as length entring: yea, there is no winde
Preparation for Tryals, how necessary,

winder which may not blow raine, if God be so pleased. Estates which have the longest periods of prosperity, are at length exercised; and there is no condition so sure and peaceable, but may turne tempestuous on the sudden, should not God be more gracious. Wherefore let us be appointed and fitted for every event. Preparing for warre, maintaineth peace: wearing a weapon, makes not us the sooner set on, nay, it prevents this danger, and makes us readie to defend our selves, when at any time we are assailed. Now this practive chiefly standeth in these three things. First, in getting a spiritual sagacity, by which our soules doe discern aforesaid, what kinde of events they may be subject unto, in this vale of teares. Nature by instinct giveth unto reasonable creatures a faculty, which maketh them aforesaid apprehensive of that which is ready to ensue. The wisdom which is from above, maketh the Lords children
children sensible in like kind, that as Job, so they in their greatest calmest fore-see how God's hand may change, for the exercise of them. The second part of practice standeth in this, in learning by due considerations, how wanting we are in wisdom, and weak in strength, which maketh able to stand when God trieth. The third thing is flying to God by faith, and holding him, as who hath beene, is, and must be for ever of all our salvation, looking to Christ the author and finisher of our faith, who hath received this commandement of his Father, that he should not onely call us, and bring us into state of grace, but also raise us up at the last day, who is that great God our Saviour, that will keepe his from every evil worke, to his heavenly kingdom. Now, when wee thus hang on God against all events, we are in a strong Tower, wherein the gates of hell shall not be able to hurt us, much lesse to prevail against us. God
God doth set us to schoole unto the Conies, that of them we may learn the Lessons: They are a weake timorous creature; yet being conscious of their weaknesse, they worke themselves Holds in the Earth, and Burrowes, where to they may retire for shelter; and though they goe forth sometimes, yet ever and anon they returne to their Holds. Oh, so must wee, in conscience of our weaknesse, by faith worke our selves into the Rocke, Christ Jesus: and though sometimes wee are abroad, as it were, in many other matters, yet wee must still returne, and renew our beleeve toward him.

22.

My beloved Friend, and Christian Brother, I am glad to heare of your safe returne. If my Sonne goe on, setting his heart to get Learning, I will set my heart, to procure him all due encouragement in so good a course. Concerning
Concerning the change of your estate, it is with our soules as with our bodies, every Age hath severall Diseases; and we see, as our dispositions and the reasons vary, so there is a succession of divers sicknesses accordingly. Our new birth being conceived & bred in faith, perfectly formed in holinesse, we are usually first affailed in that which is first in nature begotten in us: I have seldom marked temptation in both these kinds at once; God so mercifully disposing, that two so great Sicknesses should not be found complicate: For who could stand under them, combined? A-gaine, Choler can hardly cause any hot kind of sickness, while there is more of blood and watry humors bridling of it: for these are frēnum biles: so our unholiness, while we are exercised with doubtings of Gods Grace, cannot move; as when all is quiet, this very trouble causing my Faith-conflict, is frēnum concupiscence and doth perse inter-
interrupt the act, though it cannot expell the habit being considered by it selfe. Wherefore though you finde the winde gone into another corner, your spiri-

tuall nakednesse now most to molest you: and though you together ob-

serve, that you are not so apprehensive of so great an evil as you ought, yet have you no cause, but to goe on peaceably, looking to that Prince of peace, who will give thee peace of sanctification in the quiet fruit of righteousness, as he hath the peace of justification, which sometimes in some degree you wanted. For the first, we must make account our exercises will run in a circle, the ending of one will begin another, till God hath by many things sufficiently proved us, that in our latter ends hee may doe us good. Fisher-men must not make dainty of cold water, nor Christians to meete with these ca-

fes. Secondly, you must make how gently God doth bring on your triall
triall this way, making you rather to discover defect and want of righteousness, than to feele those laws of evil, and movings of grievous sins, the root whereof doth sticke in your nature. To want health, and do every natural operation feebly, is a griefe, but to feele sharper fits of some painfull disease, is more grievous. Thirdly, should we be not be trained thus by experience to see that we are as Tohu & Bohu, a true Spirituall Chaos of emptinesse and deformity, we could not be poore in spirit, follow Christ as who is made of God our sanctification, that is, our sanctifier: we could not comfort others in this state, nor taste our owne happinesse sweete in that degree, where- in we shall doe after these things experienced of us. Now though you doe not feele this mysterie, and take it to heart as you desire, yet this doth but further open our defect, that we may seeke answeraably to be supplied. We are not
not more empty of grace, than by
nature carelesse to have any: wee
would let it lie as a refuse thing,
should not God inspire us with
new desires, to seeke after it. A-
gaine, as a foolish carelesnesse, so
a spirituall flesh possesseth us, that
causeth us to be content a little
better with ease, than plenty,
which commeth with any great
travell. But what of this? When
I see it, I tell it all to God, suing
to him, that the more I see misery
abounding, the more his mercy
may abound also. I looke to him,
who as he hath called me to sancti-
fiction with an operative calling,
so he must bring me to that happy
estate, as who is Jehovah, my sancti-
fi rer. I learn in a word, this worke
will never goe forward, should not
God in mee, as he hath begun it, so
go on in it, sanctifying me thorow-
our. Againe, though I love to search
unto the quicke, yet there is some
reason, why hatred and grieue
should not so move in this estate,
It is hard for us to hate our defects.

as when infulfull passions come to stirre in our members, and leade us captive. For, looke as nature, while such matter doth but in some degree cause a Cachexie, and make her worke feebly and imperfectly in all she worketh; Nature, I say, is not so sensible here, nor doth not bestirre her selfe, as when some acute sickness doth heavily affliet; so it is even with grace in the soule; it cannot be in that measure apprehensive in this state, wherein it rather findeth it selfe to lacke some degrees of health it would have, than to be infected with intolerable sickness. But the truth is, let sinne doe what it will, wee cannot hate it of our selves: but, as by nature wee love our selves; so, that sinfull image, which is by nature propagated in us. Some Saints have found this; who having been molested many yeeres with some corruptions, nevertheless have found, that at some times they have not beene able to looke toward them with
with displeasure. I had thought, never cockering mother could take that at a child's hand, which wee put up and suffer from our lusts: but withall, I have learned to see that promise, and hold Christ to that purpose; I will put enmitie (faith God) betwene thy seed and the seed of the woman; betwixt Christ, and that life of his in all his members, and the multitude of reprobates, and that life of Satan, (for sinne may be called his image) which is not onely in them who are his seed, but in us also, till by Christ it be subdued: should not God blow up his grace so farre, we could not feele enmitie against this seed of sinne, which Satan hath sowed in us. Wherefore be not carefull in any thing; but that there creepe not upon you a despis- ling of lesser things: for, if little things be not dealt with, God will make greater looke in, which will cause us more exercise. Happie is that man who doth deale with things
Timely resistance of some, helpful.

things betime, labouring to feel e
them grievous, looking to Christ
his helper against them. That man
is a strange Christian, what-ever he
may think, though his strength
may be afflicted that he cannot
feel it great; yet vires afflieta and
vires prostrata are much different.
Againe, he shall scape much dis-
easement, by his timely resistance.
Let any man of great strength have
some superfluity of matter tending
to sickness, he doth betime ex-
pell it by imperceivable sweates,
or other easie wayes: Lesser
strength letreth it lye, till it bee
ponderous, and of acrimonie, and
some way more grievously offen-
dereth, and then it doth more paine-
fully upward and downe-ward
drive it forth. The weakest strength
of all, feeles it selfe oppressed, and
till holpen by some medicine,
cannot expell, and then doth it
painefully, and in part only: the
more strength, the sooner is a
thing contrarie to nature expel-
led;
led; the sooner, the leefe pain-
fully alwaies. Well, the Carrier
dothe stay for my Letter, I must
be short.

Yours in brotherly affiction,
Paul Bayne.

23. Hortatory.

My loving Friend, though I
winter not fall by you, as
heretofore, yet I have you in re-
membrance; for, eaten bread should
not be forgotten. I think I sete
much indebted to you, for the love
I received from you; and though
I must still ride behind, I mean,
come short, in regard of requital,
yet I will not be wanting in thank-
full confessing of kindnesse for-
passed. It is with thankfulness
as with love, it will creepe when
it cannot goe. I hope you neglect
not your best Merchandize, the
seeking those Pearles which will
make your soule rich before God.
That Marchant, World-ward, is in
small
Want of Grace the greatest poverty.

small account, who neither hath ware nor money: in like estate are Christians, who trading in the militant Church, have no part nor portion in the heavenly and true treasure. It is a thing full of confusion, and very unhappy to be without earthly possessions. Hence it is, that men in this taking, they hang downe the head, when they have no means whereby to compass the earthly good which they desire, whereas others who have them, carry their noses into the wind, have all that heart can wish, they lose no longing. Thus what shall be their confusion who are not rich in faith & repentance, the only currant coyle which doth goe with God, and fetch down what ever heavenly blessing wee can desire. Wherefore in lieu of all your love, let me exhort you, first, to labor more and more for true grace. Secondly, to use it and increase it daily. Thirdly, to watch against all such things, which may (like a backe dore) impaire
payre and wafted it. For the first; the wife Merchant doth seeke for good pearles, such as are right in their kinde: an Indian Diamond & a Bristol Stone looke alike, but differ much in the Judgment of a cunning Lapidist: No man can gather a treasure, vnlesse hee sele& that Which is precious: a maffe of counters are not to be counted a treasure. Seeke then that knowledge of Christ which may make you put off the old man, so to know God as a child knoweth his father, with an assurance property which doth vnite the heart to him: so to beleeue that you may feele your heart purged through faith, so to doe every Worke of righteousness, that you may feele your selfe enabled to it through Christ, and finde that your soule directs it to Gods glory: for as that mony onely is treasure, which is of Bullion, that is good Metall, and hath the Kings inscription: So that worke onely Will make a true Treasure and
and good foundation, Which proceeding from Christ, dwelling in vs through faith, and is directed to GOD, by Which means it is stamped as it were, with his Image. For the second: As you must get these things so you must tradewith them, seeke their increase: he that husband his flocke, shall have more. Men are long gatherers before they have got them a treasure. So Christians, though on the first beleeuing they receive unsearchable riches, yet there treasure is to be consummated and perfected from day to day. There is a double thirst & desire after wealth in the world; the one commeth from indigency, as a man in extreme drought longeth for drinke, and in extreme want, for something which might help him. There is another desire, which commeth from complacency, from pleasure felt in that wee haue obtained; thus a man, when thirst is in some degree quenched, desir eth to drinke againe
gaine; thus a poore man, having now gotten something well about him, yet would faine have a more flush, full estate: better is still better: this desire then must be in all Christians: the goodness of the things they have tasted, must affect them with a further desire of increaing in them. I would have you be as I have seene some good husbands in dead time, when stirrings faile, they count the day lost in which they have had no takings. Account that day as lost, wherein you have not gotten some more sense of sin, wherein your faith hath not something more enforced it selfe to lay hold on God and his precious promises, wherein some good thing is not done, which may stand as a good foundation, whereon the conscience may relye, as an undoubted testimony of saving beliefe. Lastly, take heede of that which may quench your affection to God, as dead company, who can never speak, nor have the language of
Take heed of what may impair grace.

of Canaan: inordinate and double diligence about earthly things. More perish with preposterous following of lawful things, than doe by unlawful courses. Soft sands swallow more ships, than hard rocks split asunder. Liciti sperimus omnes. Eating, drinking, building, matter of marriage, the world shall be drowned in these, when Christ comes to judgement. Use all good means not with-drawing your selfe from them. Disposing means quencheth grace, as with-holding fuel quencheth fire. Weed out of your heart all such things, as like a choake-weede spring up and mother better devotions. Men grow rich not onely by getting, but by saving and holding together that they have gotten. Great gettings with little spendings, is the most approved Alchymie: should one have never such takings, if one should filch out his gaine as it came in, hee would not increase in substance. Thus Christians
must look the Diuell robbe them
not by any means, of any grace
which they haue obtained, that so
their soules may thrive in their
heavenly estate. But my letter
swellethe beyond my intendment,
and I cannot hold backe my pen
from affording you any thing,
whom I haue found so forward in
shewing me kindnesse.

S
fter M. my wife and I held
it meete to signifie both, our
remembrance of you, whom your
token hath testified not to bee vn-
mindfull of vs both, for when
my wife is thought on, I thinke
then I am not quite forgotten.
You will be desirous to know how
my wife and her place agreeth.
Concerning which I enforce you
thus much, that both of vs, in re-
gard of all circumstances, do think
our liues well fallen; if we should
speake otherwise, wee should not
sanctifie him in our hearts, who
is mercifull to vs, Neuerthe-
leffe
Sorrows that attend every condition.

Le Sse, you must not think that we have such a condition, in which no sorrows in the flesh and otherwise, are not intermeddled, we live not in that earthly paradise, but our lives are so made comfortable through God's grace, that we know there remaineth yet a further rest for his people: the which the rather I mention, that you should not think much, if in your condition, all things suit not with your desire, because that this is no other thing, than wherewith your brethren and sisters everywhere conflict. There is a sweate of the brow on every calling, a wearisome vanity on every condition, only the grace of God in Christ doth dispence with much which might justly befall vs and doth strengthen vs to bear that comfortably in time, which his fatherly wisdom shall not have released. And because I know not in what argument to speake more for your comfort, I will prosecute in a few lines this argument.
Why God makes carnal

It pleaseth God to let us find some conditions not fit to well upon us as heretofore they have done, yea, the same things waxe tedious, which have beene delightfull, for our love, our hatred, the ordering of our affections, is not in our power, but doth vary according to God's pleasure. Now when we observe such things grow on us, we must both inke us of the cause, for that is the next way to discern how our griefe must be cured. Now thus it is with us, that the comfort of our estate doth result more from carnall easement often, and contentments in it, than from the grace of God in Christ Jesus, shed into the heart by meanes of it. Now God seeing this, doth so work, that things pleasant in themselves become distastefull to us, to the end that wee might seek more into him, and take up all our contentment in him, that thus, hee our Creator & Redeemer, might be the rest of our hearts, not the creature.
Our hearts are full of secret Idolatry above measure: Now then, when God doth unsettle our hearts from a contentment, which is carnall, hee doth it but to leade us to cast our contentation by true godlineesse. What a sweet life is it, that when a man is not troubled with desires of this World, with griefes, or deluded with the joyes of it, which are like the crackling of thornes under a pot, as soone quenched as kindled? But if we grow to desire things heavenly, to seeke diligently the things which are above, this desire will take off the edge of other that are worldly. If wee learne to rejoice in Christ Jesus, it will kill his false joy, the end whereof is heaviness. If we grieve for our sins according to that, Weepe for your sinnes, yee daughter of Jerusalem. It will drowne earthly sorrows, that they shall be as nothing with us. Grow up in these things, and I may truely say, you shall have a kingdom in your selfe.
A letter concerning the communicants.

I am bold upon so small acquaintance, to exhort you in these things a duty which we are bound to as Christians, where occasion doth require it. I might write further to you; but I rather hint my selfe to roue uncertainly. If I could know how to performe an office of Christian love to you, I would study the case but it should bee performed. My wife doth remember her selfe unto you. Your friendes are well with vs. Thus in haste I take my leave, wishing that the peace of God which passeth understanding may keepe your heart unto the end and in the end.

Let your halting should turne forth hurtfully to you and others, I write more speedily. You ask two questions; The first about the communicants duties; the second about kneeling. The first, whether you may receive with one who for want of skill,
Duties externall and kneeling.

or will, is no preaching Minister. To which I answer in two considerations; first, if he bee able to preach but will nor, it is no question: for defect in qualification, not in exercise, breedeth doubt of men's calling and authority. Again, the exercise of preaching is not necessary in the Minister to the being of a Sacrament, but requisite only to the well-being and greater fruit of it. If the Minister be not able to preach, the doubt is much augmented; for God, it seemeth, doth disapprove him, he that careth not for knowing, God rejecteth him as no Priest, Hos. 4:3. Secondly, All Christ's Ministers must teach and baptize, &c. Mat. 28. Thirdly, it is counted Aroboams are to set up vile insufficient ones, 2 King 15. 33. Fourthly, They are commended that sold their inheritances, and left such Priests. Fiftly, They have no calling from God, and therefore are not authorized with holy things.
Ungifted Ministers may administer.

**Answ.** Notwithstanding these and such like, this I doubt not is the truth of God: First, that the Sacramental actions of ungifted Ministers are effectual to such as faithfully receive them. Secondly, that we may seek and receive the Sacrament at their hands. These two conclusions must be proved, and the contrary arguments satisfied: and so the second question in his order resolved. That these actions are authentically when performed, it is thus confirmed; First, Augustine proveth that Hereticke Sacraments (in his Booke de Bap. lib. i. cap. 10) are effectual, where we may reason as to the lesser, that unlearned men's actions have validity. Secondly, we should all in comparison call in question our Christendomes, which is absurdity. Thirdly, as the deed of one in Magistratu, so the deed of one in Ministerio, though he be not Usquequaque legitimus Minister, is authentically, hath his validitie. The
Second conclusion is more controversall; for wee allow the Papists Baptisme when administrated, yet will not allow the seeing of it: nevertheless this is true, that people may seeke and take sacramentall actions from unlearned men; the reason is, because we have right to aske them, and they not without the calling of God, have authority to dispense them. The first you doubt not, the second you would see confirmed, for it is thought they are onely mans Ministers.

Answ. They are called by men, but not without the over-ruling stroke of God in this which is done by man. Thus Saul and Jeroboam the first, were called by men: So that God saith, Hos. 8. 3. They set up Kings, and made not him of counsell; yet God saith againe, in the 13. of Hos. 11. He gave them these Kings in his wrath, and took them away in indignation. Again, when God tellth us, Jer. 3. Repent, I will give you Pastor, after my owne heart. He doth seeme
We may communicate with ungifted

it seeme to insinuate that hee had given them the other, though in displeasure: for though the men are not such in whom he is pleased, yet they are here and there placed, according to his pleasure. You will say, what, are they given in vengeance, how can we looke for any good from them?

Answ So in judgement, that yet God remembereth mercy for his, which he will reach forth by them. So tyrants are Gods's soures, yet God righteth some by their regiment: for Tyranny is better than Anarchie. Suppose then: The Lord Chauncellour of England, he must be for his qualification a man well seen in the Lawes, able to sentence whatsoever causes are brought into Chancery: he must againe seale all matters, for he keepeth the Signet. Say secondly, the King should set or let one occupie the place that knew not the Law, who would passe the Seale likewise here or there leffe warrantably: would you now
now in the third place having the grant of anything from his Highness, refuse to let him put to the Kings scale, because he was ignorant, & would give the scale sometimes when his Majesty would have it denied? Like is your case. But why may not we seeke dwelling amongst Papists, to have our children baptized with them?

**Answ.** Because they are not only ignorant, but maintaine reall Idolatry, like the Calves of Dan and Bethel, from which wee have commandement to separate. Conclude then, that you may come and seeke the Sacrament at the hand of an unlearned Minister. Take heed of such suggestions by which the counterfeit angels of light would subvert Churches, and fling whole Parishes out at the windowes. Now to resolve your objection. Those whom God threatneth to cast out, their actions which they performe, may not be sought for: the proposition is false: for his threat-
threatening is not a present degrading, dis-inabling them in that they could doe, but a menace of future evill in Gods time, for that they ought to have done, but could not. To Jeroboams fact. Those who are by the sin of men entred, their actions may not be taken benefit of.

Answ. False againe. The Kings of Israel thus entred, yet one might holily have taken the benefit of justice under them. Hee that should be never so didacticall, yet if he be not according to St. Pauls Canon, he entreteth by sin: but would you make question to heare him, once in office, being well gifted? To the third, All Christs Ministers must teach, and therefore whom he sends he enables thereunto.

Answ. False; Unless understood with limitation, all sent of Christ according to his heart, out of favour, fully qualified, or wee must take teaching in a very large sense. To the 4. Wee may not separate from
Kneeling lawfull in the act of, &c.

from every unlearned man when he is no reall Idolater. To the first is answered above. The second is of lesse moment, I will not dispuse it: onely this. When there is no apparent scandall, you may kneele: Latent things which cannot with morall certainty be presumed, must not hinder us. My reason; First, it is a gesture sanctified of God, to be used in his service. Secondly, it is not unbeseeeming a Feaster, when our joy must be mingled with reverent trembling. Thirdly, it neither is an occasion, nor by participation Idolatry: kneeling never bred bread-worship. And our Doctrine of the Sacrament, knowne to all the world, doth free us from inspition of adoration in it. Attend your ministry, and hold the Lord Jesus to sanctifie you daily. Let nothing weaken you in your worke, he beginning whereof was so joyfull to you. I doubt not but these are the truth; if I knew twentie cruples I could not answer, yet would
The good must shine in evil times.

would I be of this judgment. I like not surgery which upon every want dismembereth and cuteth off; nor such meddling in crazie bodies which doth utterly overthrow them; holy quiet will heal more in these cases than venturous motion. Farewell

SYR, I cannot but be ready vp. on all occasions to salute you, whom God hath by so many good offices indebted to me. My desire to God is, that your soul may prosper, that you may be kept in these evil times, wherein darkness and lusts of ignorance abound, like to the Lampe which shined in the smoaky furnace, like to the bright staire which shined in the midst of darkenes. Now that we may do this, we must ever renew our care of keeping our selves unspotted from the wicked and powerless conversation of others. Like as an evil ayre by little and little alters the nature and temperature of bo-
...and breeds a disease: so the corrupt fashion of every age doth sub upon us its infection, abating the heat, and eclipsing the light of grace in us; if we be not more aulcous, and in an holy suspicion of our infirmities, hang on him who keepeth his from all evils. The Lord giue vs that love which make vs more studious of his glory, the more we see it obscured by others. That is a right spark of eavenly grace, which by occasion of sinne (like as it was in David and Jeremiah) groweth to be more fervent and zealous for God's honor. Secondly, to keepe our delight we must frequent communion with the children of light. A weak light joyning with another, becommeth stronger: so our grace, while it associates itself with the grace in others, taketh increase. Like as a plant which is set in a kindly soile prospereth for that reason: so a Christian that groweth vp among hem who are truely Christian in that
that regard, proves the holier man.
It is admirable how so great and
tall a man as St. Paul, should find
and feel so great necessity of com-
munion with the Saints, but that
the greatest faith is most opposit
to presumption, and therefore th
farthest off from neglecting an
means which conduces to that i
hath believed. I am sure it may
teach us, that we had neede to ligh
t our candle, and kindle our fire with
our neighbours, even to increas
our faith, and fire our affections on
with the presence of another. Now
still it is to be remembered, that
is not so much your bodily pre
sence, as your spirituall use one o
another that is available this wa
when wee shew what God hath
done for us, how our soules are car
ried on, when with the bucket o
wisdom, we can draw forth
our use the waters of Grace, whi
God hath derived from himself
into the hearts of our brethren.
That is good Communion, when
is found some interchangeable communication of things spiritual. Thirdly, to keepe our brightness, we must exercise our graces. As the body taketh more resting than stirring, sleepeth than waking; its glistering metallls lose their brightness, and contract rustinesse when they are not used: so it is with our soules; let exercise be neglected, their light will be dimmed, they will soone grow to some imbecillitie and sickenesse.

Every day draw some line this way, let us awaken our repentance, stirre up our faith, to carry some promise into the secret of our hearts.

If wee be like the busie Ant, dailly doing (although but a little at once) wee shall finde store to our comfort, when the winter of temptation shall approach. This exercising is it, which will preserve us with wholesome appetire, and unger after all good meanes whereby our soules are cherished.

These
These labouring men are as found as a Roche, hungry as hunters, whereas sedentary lives are of small appetite, and crazie constitution. Thus it is with Christians such who exercise not themselves, stirring up the divine heat, they are indifferent men whether they partake in helps both publick and private, which God hath ordained to increase devotion, but the well exercised Christian hath other affections.

Thus much I thought good to write, exhorting you in these things, which I doubt not but you endeavour in your measure. I thank you for all the poore you have relieved at my motion. I commend myself to the good Gentlewoman your Wife, and both of you, with all yours, to the Lord.

26

My loving friend, I was at the first often persuaded, that God would for a time set me out of hand, and trust me with my accustomed...
comed liberty, but often desheafe, which my hope suffred, did correct in time that lightenesse of believe. Now it so goeth with me, that I am like to continue here, or not far off all this summer, for some things have broken forth in mee, which will not suffer my farre travaile: which I must seeke helpe for because I know my flesh to bee hard of healing. What ease should I have, had I learned the true stroke in bearing the yoke of my God, had I wisdome to lay circumstances to heart, had I poverty of spirit, emptying mee of all confidence in myself, & common course, had I confident dependance on God my sole Saviour, then should I have had peace in the midst of troubles, and light in darkenes. But I finde folly to abound in me, secret pride, hardnesse of heart, a spirituall drunkenesse, which feceth no blowes, flying, false confidence: what not of this nature? traile my weapons about them,
The soul must be brought low.

as the walls of hell, expecting in silence, and reft their downe-fall from heaven.

I looke for better times though greater troubles in the flesh, than hitherto I have knowne: I see it must be in healing sinne, which falleth out in healing some bodily diseases, the party must be kept for low, that he must be tantum non confessus inedia, before a spring of better blood can be procured. In labouring to purge out sin, the life of grace must suffer such things as bring it exceeding low, yea, to a Deliquium often, before a new spring of that heavenly life can be obtained. I thanke God in Christ, sustentation I have, and some little strength, suavities spirituall I taste not any. But indeed I often tell my selfe, Physick purgative and restorative are not to be taken at one and the fame time, yea, it were to with suffering without suffering, if wee would fo admit sorrows; as that wee would together feel them drow-
drowned of spirituall consolation. The divinity rested ere the head suffered: so in the members. The Lord be our strength and comfort. If wee want courage and strength, wee must looke to him, to whom who so lookest, reneweth strength. Who strengtheneth his, so that they can doe every thing, who strengtheneth them in the inner man, to long sufferance with joyfulness. O let us in conscience of all weakness claspe the rocke of Israel, and learne of those Conies, weake and wise, who worke themselves holds within the earth, wherein they are safe. When the Apostles had receivd this spirit of strength, they made a play of their sufferings. Even as in bodily things these strong-boned hardy porters, will make a sport of bearing such burdens, which a weake body would tremble to touch: Now Christ, on whom the spirit of wisdom and strength resteth, increase our union and communion with him.

K how
How happy Sir, are the Lords children, who if they be once his Favorites, hee will love them to the end, and though for their sinne he chasten them, yet will hee never remove his mercy from them. What is their happiness who have received a Kingdom that cannot be shaken? When I observe how these earthly things wheele about, then methinkes how happy that man is, whose heart and hope is in that God with whom there is no shadow of change: wherfore let me stir you up to seek after the Kingdom of God more and more. Heires, the nearer they come to ripe age, and so to their inheritance, the more their longing and desire is after them. And fire, they say the nearer it commeth to that region which is the proper place of it, the faster it moveth: so should it be with us, whose age
God more and more, and how.

age is now ripe, so that wee are
neerer our salvation, than when
we first beleevd: so should it be
with our sparke of Grace, which
God hath kindled in us, the neerer
it comes to heaven, it should move
thitherward with great fervency,
yea, in our greatest delights, our
hearts should be excited towards
those joyes which there we shall
enjoy: when our prison hath such
content as wee often take, what
shall wee finde prepared in our Pa-
radise, where we shall live for ever
with Christ that true tree of life!
Now, the labour of a Christian
standeth chiefly in these things.
First, hee must lay up those free
promises God hath made him in
Christ, as which are the ground of
his Title to heaven, that as men
carefully boxe up evidences, and
coppies by which they can shew
their just Title to the thing earth-
ly, so should we these promises in
our heart, by which the hea-
venly inheritance is sealed to us.

K 2 Second-
Secondly, we must strive to enter our possession, by continuing a course of Christian virtues, joyning with faith virtue, with it knowledge, temperance, &c. while wee get a large entrance into that heavenly kingdom, 2 Pet. 1. 10. That looke as Israel, the more they did subdue the Canaanites, the further they were possessed of Canaan, so the more we bring under all earthy lusts, the more we enter that heavenly Canaan, the more we come into true rest, begunne in holiness, consummate in glory. Thirdly, wee must labour to secure our selves in this state wee possess. God would not make us happy, if wee might not be sure still to hold it, which though in earthly things we cannot, for they be transitory, and if they would abide, wee want leaves of our lives to abide with them, yet wee may in heavenly things, because they are eternall, shall not fade, and Christ hath undertaken to keepe
of the kingdom of Heaven.

us unto them. This is my Fathers will, that I should raise you up at the last day. So certainly therefore as hee hath called us, justified us, and sanctified us; so certainly will hee doe this other part of his office assigned him by God his Father, yea, God will keepe us to his heavenly kingdom, as hee faith, and none shall take us out of our Fathers hands, he is stronger than all, faith in these will swe out a fine, as it were, and give us quiet possession against all that can oppose us.

Well, the Lord be with your spirits, and give you in your measure the comfort of these points.

28.

Oving Brother, I did receive your Letter which doth certify me of matters, in which I take good contentment. To beginne with the last; I am glad you have done so kinde an office to your Sister;
Sister; it shall further your owne reckoning, when you come to be accountant to God. I am glad likewise, that you know your local grieves so well, and can lay your finger where it smarts; and I am joyed in your resolution which God giveth you of shaking off this which presseth you downe. I thought to have had a letter staying your returne next Terme, but delay breedeth danger, and vacati on time is more free for thoughts, than when every mans case craveth entrance: and in these considerations my second thought biddeth mee write presently, though lese exactly and fully. Your resolution is a good signe that God, who hath freed your minde to a settled purpose against it, will give you in time performance also. But you must take heed that your resolution be such as is grounded onely in Gods strength, who in his Christ must dissolve this worke of the Divell, and it must be accompa-
nied with the conscience of your owne weaknesse, who are sold under such sinne; the widsome of whose soule, by nature becoming altogether earthly; and lastly, with consideration, what strength the earthly objects and your propensity and inclination this way have to oppose you: for these will make you poore in spirit, and have no confidence in your selfe, but make Christ your Captaine (who hath overcome the World) all your hope; and if wee come not thus to fight, we shall be forced to recoile our foot, were our quarrell as just as Israel against those of Benjamin. Now that you may see how strong an evill this is, you must consider with what forces it is intrenched, what spirituall things there be that doe backe this infirmity; the which is the rather to be observed, because the right method of healing, requireth that we find out the causes of the malady. Now this double diligent
ought to be grounded.

gent carefulnesse, springeth from a threefold head: first from distrust in God's care, which is ever over us for good. When one hath great friends, which they are knowne to leaneto, we say of them, Such need to take no care, they know such and such will see to them; on the contrary, come to one that know-eth no end of toiling and caring, aske him, Why will you thus tire your selfe out? He will say, I must needs doe it, I have none but my selfe to trust to: So Christ followeth his Disciples carefulnesse to this dore, their unbelief, which did not let them consider our heavenly Father cared for them. Secondly, these cares come from a false presumtion of selfe-sufficieny in our owne courses, as if wee by our owne diligence could build the house: For, were a man perswaded that the blessing of God were all in all, hee would ply that fare first, and with little joy would undertake any thing; till hee saw God
Causes of overmuch worldly care.

God witnesseth to him by his Spirit, that he would be with him to bless him. This maketh Christ tell his Disciples, they could not with all care make a hair white or blacke; insinuating this disease I point at. I know we will not say this, but no more will any covetous man, that hee maketh his money his God; hee knoweth it is earth, and hee accounts of it as it is: but our deeds speake that of ten, which our tongues would deny. Thirdly, from an overvaluing of earthly things, and underprizing of heavenly, we come to be so carefull in the one, and so recklessly affected in the other, we being like children who make account of a Pear or an Apple more than of all the house beside. Now having found the causes and roots of this evil, you may discerne it is as easie almost to shake off your selfe, as to be rid of this infirmity: which I speake not to make you resist heartily, but to make you take
take him with you, who only remaineth victorious. In the next place, you must labour to remove these causes, and the effect will cease; Say to your selfe, Lord, that I should be of so little faith to thee; thou biddest mee in nothing be carefull, but rest in thee; but I find a heart that will not rest in thee, but be for it selfe. Have I not found thee true and mercifull above all I could aske or thinke? How is it then that I should lend thee so little credit? Who will not condemn that wretched Abaz, Esay 7, when thou didst send him a message, and bid him be secure in thee, put it backe, hee would make sure for him selfe? But alas! when thou liest no lesse to us, we (upon the matter) doe no lesse than hee. Againe, what abomination is this, that my heart should, leaving thee, rest in such courses which it selfe imagineth and deviseth? I see the Divell his word is proved too true; hee said, wee should be like Gods, which
Considerations de\sasive from

which as it is false in respect of divine qualities resembling our God, so is it true in regard of our sinful usurpation: for we take our owne course as if wee were All-sufficient to our selves, not needing any higher power: and what an inordinacy is this, that my soule should be thus turned earthward, thinking on these things which are earthly and transitory, with little thought of those which are heavenly and eternal? We pity that want of wit in civil course, which maketh the minde runne on bables, but never thinke on ought substantiall: but what is this defect leffe lamentable, which maketh me tosse in my mind things belonging to this life, seldom musing on those which are everlasting? Thus when you have pondred the wretchednesse of it, you must thinke on your utter inability to mend the matter, by observing how deepe your heart is gone in unbelief, that you can sooner trust to any thing man se-ecureth
cureth you in, than that God pro-
miseth. Againe, how naturall it is
to you to plot and contrive affaires,
and rest in your owne consultati-
one, as if your good were in your
owne hand; by marking, finally,
how deeply you are bewitched
with these things present, how po-
tently they work upon your mind,
by reason of the affiniry that is be-
twixt them and your understand-
ing, being become earthly. In
the third place, you must look to
Christ to helpe your unbeliefs, by
taking it away, and strengthening
your faith, that you may give him
truth; by setting your rest only
downe on this, that hee careth for
you; and pray him to circumcise
your heart, and pare away that
Selfe-confidence, that you may
have no trust in the flesh, but make
his care over you, all your rejoy-
cing; yea, pray him to crucifie all
these outward things to you, that
they may not be so powerfull upon
you. In these things you must fol-
low
low Christ, for hee is the Author and finisher of our faith; he is the true Priest by whom we have circumcision, nor made with hands, which hee hath sealed in our Baptisme; for the water is a sacel of Christ's blood applied to us, and of that Spirit of his, which is poured into our hearts, through the merit of his blood, to the intent it might abolish our corruption, and create in us the life of grace. Christ crucified, finally, doth kill the power of this world to us, and our corrupt inclination to it, and the things of it: thus endeavouring to remove the root and cause of your sickneffe, the griefe it selfe will not easily be cured. To come then in a word to it, first, remember how it doth worke upon you, and what a wofull thing it is to have the minde inordinately feared, with retaining thought of this nature; for first, how greatly doe these hinder you in the best things? It is the common choake-
The danger of overmuch worldly care.

Weede, which like as yvie doth by the oake, so it sucketh the sap of Grace from the heart, and maketh it unfruitfull. A ground in which silver Mines are found, is commonly barren every other way; but it is certaine, a heart in which veins runne of worldly cares, is alwaies too fruitlesse in duties towards God. Againe, how dangerous is this? For it is to be feared left it exasperate God, and so make him leave you to your selfe, and withdraw his care over you: if we discerne such as will put no trust in us; but love to stand upon their owne ground, we give them good leave: as contrarily, the more wee see our selves trusted to, the more our fidelity is careful for them that stay upon us; thus is it with our heavenly Father. Againe, you must aggravate this inordinacy of cares in yourself, from this circumstance: if I were never so needy, this distracting care could not be warranted; but when God hath
hath blessed mee beyond that I could have asked, then still to be in farther thoughts, how inexcusable is it? If a poore man steale, it is a shame; but for a rich man to play the thiefe, it is monstros: Cares distraeting, and not resting on things present, are a spirittuall theif before God. Againe, thinke how miserable this is: say one should thrust your face and bodily sight into the dirt, and hold it downe there that you could not looke up to the Sunne, Firmament, the Trees and Fields, &c. were not this a wofull condition? O such is the state of a soule, whose eye and thought is thrust downe into these earthly objects, and so held in them, that it cannot looke up to consider the Sunne of righteousness Iesus Christ, nor the heavenly things which are given us of God: thus then apprehending the misery of it, looke unto Christ, pray him to save you, who is that Iesus that faveth his people from guilt and power
power of sin; from this sin so hurtful to the present growth in Grace, so dangerous to provoke your God against you, so ill be seeming you to whom God hath expressed such bounty, so full of wretchedness. Remember he hath said, Hold me the truth, I will set you free; fear not, I have overcome the world. Again, you must pray him that he would make you able to be heavenly minded, and think upon heavenly things. True it is, our minds naturally have no joy this way, had no relish in such thoughts; but we shall do all things in Christ that strengtheneth us: Contraries must be cured with contraries, the more you get to taste heavenly things bestowed on you, the more these shall grow out of request, and draw to an end. It will be good for you when such thoughts seize on you, to consider of your own infirmity after this manner; O Lord, how is my minde throwne downe from Heaven to Earth?
Perswasive Meditations.

How doe such thoughts prevent me, and come before I would have them? How easily do I continue in them? How close doe they cleave unto me? Let mee thinke of thee, thy Grace, my state after death; and hardly will these enter: soone they vanish, and while I have them in my thought, scarce halfe of me is in them. Lord, me thinkes I am like the wretched woman in the Gospell, who was held of a spirit eightene yeares, that shee could not looke up to heaven. You shall finde such meditation not in vaine, when you are ready to be transported, for it will weaken the returne of them, and dispose you both to seeke and receife the cure of this evill from your God and Saviour. The Physicians in some kinde of unseemely convulsions, with that the Patient should looke on himselfe in a glasse, which will help him to strive the more, when he shall see his owne deformity: but I see my Letter will grow be-
to heavenly mindedness.

beyond the due quantity of it; wherefore I end, desiring you to follow your good purpose, and not to lye under your infirmity with any pretence. Wee sometimes give way to inordinate cares, not meaning to continue them, but to settle things onely in order, that wee may be free from them: but the flesh will not heale flesh, neither will being a while distractingly carefull, ever heale distractingly care; you shall quench the fire with wood, assoone as itune with yeelding to it. Againe, I will doe this but till, &c. This is as much as if one would leape into the Thames, and say, I will cast my selfe into the water, but only till I be knee depe; were not this ridiculous? Well Brother, the Lord deliver you from every evil snare; and if you will ever be a good husband, and have all things continue and prosper, be sure you win his favour, by presenting your diligent duty in Christ his favour,
Middling in worldly cares dangerous

in whose hand is all your good, yea, the good of your wife, children, and children's children for ever.

Yours in brotherly affection,

Paul Bayne.

Oving Brother, you would think me haply like to those creatures which sleepe over all the Winter, should I but continue silent till the Summer were came. The truth is, I have beene very weary the most of the time since I saw you, but my condition is such, as will not suffer my minde to rest, were I never so free of bodily infirmities, and secular cares, which doe sometimes looke into mee, though not much disturb me. Truly, it doth take up my strength, to get strength wherewith to walk from morning to night, waiting on my Gods salvation without making
king haft. The Prince of peace is my refuge, who as hee hath his time of making heavie, so he will returne and comfort in the multitude of his mercies. These things I write not so much for my Apologie, as for your admiration and instruction, that you may consider of your own estate, and examine your peace; that if you find it to be true and sound, your thankes may be redoubled for so great a benefit, which others want, which passeth understanding: that if otherwise it prove deceitfull, you may yet make sure worke, and set it aright, while the day of grace is continued to you. The Divell circumventeth many by nothing more, than by lulling them asleep in such a rest, as will prove to restleffe smart, if it be not by repentant courses interrupted. A man may have peace from not stirring and moving his corruptions. The Divell, we say, is quiet, if he be pleased; disease not sin, you shall feel little of it; such
is the peace of a body, which is, though not sick, yet in an ill habit, and state tending to sickness; it is quiet, till something be taken, which fighteth with, and expelleth the sick matter; not because there are no peccant humors in it, but it is therefore at ease, because they are not provoked and purged out with wholesome medicine. Again, many feel not disquietment, because they doe not task themselves about good duties; as in exercising their faith, renewing their thankfulness, getting more shame and griefe to smite their hearts in their daily wants, in laboring to be more fruitfull in good works than they have beene: in seeking heavenly mindedness and holiness, which might make them doe all things as become the presence of God, before whom they are. Indeed no wonder if wee be at ease while wee set not hand to these works. A lameaking limbe hath ease while it resteth, but yet is not well,
well, though it hath not sense of evill. Againe, there is no ease from deepinesse of conscience; while spirituall slumber bindeth the senses, and discerning spirituall; so that though there be many wofull evils, yet in all of them no diseasement is perceived. Thus a man with twenty sickneses, well asleepe, feeleth nothing. Lastly, there is no easie discomfit, often in the body, because the senses being taken up with objects delightfull to them, tend not that grief which hangeth about them: of which sort is the peace of the soule, which discerneth things amiss, matters of griefe; but the gratefull objects of the world, pleasure, company, &c. doe so possesse it, that being in these, it feeleth nothing of that which in some more retirèd thoughts it seemed to apprehend. What should I speake of misdeeming our estates? There is a way right in a man's eyes, the end whereof is death; and the rest of which misconceit, is like the ease of
Take heed of spiritual sloth.

of a golden dream. Or what should I mention any other kinds, which I think not so pertinent for your estate? I beseech you take heede of that neglect of getting your sicke soules dressed, that spiritual sloth and restinesse, that slumber, that having your soules taken up with these matters which are gratefull to the natural man; take heede that none of these doe make you nap to your after sorrow. You will haply say; In what standeth this true peace? Answer. In perceiving the Grace of God such towards mee in Christ, that my Conscience, through his blood, is cleansed from the guilt of sinne, that my soule, through his Spirit, is freed from the rage and tyranny of sinne, that it hath not that power to carry me captive to it, and work my disturbance, which sometimes it hath had. Thirdly, that my condition, through his Blessing in Christ made a Curse for mee, is made so comfortable, that it plea-
seth me well; there being no tedious disasments with which it is accompanied, which would extinguish my joy for the present.

Fourthly, that for the time to come hee will keepe me to him, putting his feare in my heart, according to his promise, that I may not depart from him, finishing my faith hee hath begun; never leaving nor forsaking me, but causing every thing work togetther, for my good. For there is a foure-fold Branch of this Peace; one, shooteth forth of our Justification; the other, from our Sanctification; the third, from that Blessing with which God doth follow us, in our outward condition; the fourth, from the knowledge we have of his gracious pleasure towards us, even for the time to come; without which, wee could not have true peace: for how can a man have true peace earthly, without a secure possession of the good he holdeth? So there could be no true peace spirituall to us, now blessed
blessed with heavenly things, if we might not have and hold them
with a spiritual security. Therefore, deare Brother and Sister, enter
into your hearts; mark whence it is, that you goe on at ease from
day to day: Is it because you see, that God for his Christ's
blood, which hath cried for better things than the blood of Abel,
hath absolved you from the guilt of all your sinne? Is it because
you feel the power of sinne broken, that it cannot prevail against
you, as sometimes it hath done, but you finde sinne weakened, and your
soules with more freedome obeying God in such things, in which
sometimes you could not deny your selves? Doe you see, that
whereas your estates sometimes were troublesome to you, now
they are made such as give you contentment, through the grace
of God, blessing us in Christ, accursed for us? Doth God open the
eyes of your minde, to see his

gracious
gracious unchangeable good will towards you for ever? Then you have good ground for being at ease within your selves. But if you finde that your quiet springeth hence, because you disquiet not your selves in weeding out your ignorance, unbeliefe, carelesnesse, &c. or because you doe not prove your feeble spirituall strengths, in labouring to doe every thing out of obedience of faith to the Lord, who should ever be before you; if because customary fashions, occasions, or obje&ts of this or that nature, keepe you occupied about them, take heed of this Ease, as ever you desire to live in that eternall Rest, which God hath prepared for his people. Digge into your hearts betime, hold them to that which is above them selves, through the strength of Christ: (they will hang off from every thing that is not naturall, to them.) Judge your selves daily in your wants to God-ward,
ward, seeke to Christ the quickening Spirit, that you may feel life and power in your waies: labour for sobriety in the use of all worldly things: (you know the last times; their destiny is to have shewes, without life and power, to eate, drinke, marry, with forgetting the appearance of Christ.) Labour these things, and the God of Peace make you taste his joyes, which are transcendenc, above all this World can afford.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayne.
Desire Sister, your Letter came not to mee, till I had beene a fortnight out of London. I would not have hastened from you, to have been a lieger there so long. I felt my weakness knocking more than before, and saw your hands full, which made me long after my most familiar Mansion. For that which you signify, as falling you that night, I desire to have fellow-feeling with you. Wee must nor, like Swallowes, take the Summer, and refuse to dwell with our friends in Winter: but it is a true saying, None knowes what newes the Evening will tell him. Had I known it in the Morning, it may be, for your sake, my second thoughts would have rejoyned my present designes. But God is wise, who, when he giveth us Physicke, doth put all the outward comforts wee affect, farre from us, lest his chastisements
We are more sensible of Crosses,

Affections should work less kindly, and to the purpose, with us. Deare Sister, the Physicke must make us sicke, that doth us any good: yet Sister, as wee must not hinder them with preposterous and over-timely comfort of our selves, so wee must not make them more vehemently stirre us than they do; for both are dangerous. I perceive by your little patheticall Letter, that you thinke a great deale on this late hand of God: Your eldest Brother, your eldest Brother already, your eldest Brother already rooted out; these are all affectionate eloquence. Sister, our naughty envies are full of false glasses: when God doth us any favour, giving us blessings, then they hold a glasse before us, which maketh them seeme nothing so great as they are; when God sendeth any crosse, then they deceive us with such a glasse, in which we seeme to see them much greater than they are. Besides, because God giveth us such plenty
of mercy, that wee are ever in tasting and professing some good thing, or other; therefore, these being plentiful, make them leafe dainty: but not alwaies feeling some evill or other, they move us, when they come so much the more, by how much they are more unusual with us. Wee seele more the ach of one tooth, than the healthsome frame of our whole bodies. Let you and me then talke about these things which sticke most uppon your remacke. Sister, Is it not more kindly, the younger should bury the eldest, than other-wise? This then must not grieve you, that God hath taken the eldest; he was the rippest, and fittest to be gathered. But why doe you say, Already? Alas, good heart; if hee had died before his upper Lip had sprouted, I should not have wondred at this word: but, Sister, he lived almoft to gray haires; you could not begge a longer Leafe of your owne life, in modesty, than God
God gave him here amongst the living. If we kept our days in number, we would think fewer yeeres many; and in those yeeres he came to a ripe age. Take heed, left whiles you looke at that you have not, you forget the Lords bounty, which is already received, in his so long continuance with you. When you say, He is rooted out; I take it, you use this phrase chiefly, because hee is dead without heires male: but that hee hath heires female, it is a gift of grace which wee deserve not; neither will his name be dead, while his Brother liveth. And what is the Name? Is it none of our things which cannot be shaken; every Name must at length be extinct. I must not heale more in you than I find; left when I seeke to cure a wound that is, I make a new one, which before was not. I conceive your meaning no further: but comfort your selfe in this; your best eldest Brother liveth, and is by his Spirit,
Spirit, with you to the end; your Lord Jesus, who is not ashamed to call us Brethren. O Sister, would you provoke your heart to be glad of him, you should not sorrow exceptively for the absence of any earthly Brother: and whatsoever thing is in your thought, yet consider who hath done it; even your loving Husband in Heaven. If your earthly Husband should doe some shrewd turne, as unawares break some Iewell you much let by; when you heard that he did it, you would be staid, though before you were much moved. You must say as Christ faith; Shall I not drinke the Cup my Father putteth in my hand? That God, that is, Love, doth reach it unto you. If you see God angry, yet be of good cheare; hee that will not have sinfull man let the Sunne go downe on his anger, hee will not for ever keepe anger against you: and a Parent is a Parent, as well frowning, as smiling. Judge your selfe, and with a faithfull
full heart, shew him his beloved Sonne, in whom he is well pleased; and he will be better friends with you than ever. Stirre up your selfe to more zeale of God's glory, in seeking to bring children and servants to obey him in their spirits, as well as serve your selfe with bodily subject. Oh, thinke them no servants for you, that will not learne to serve your Husband in Heaven also. Have an eye over young and old, that there be no appearance of the least irreverence in your duties to God; occasion your selfe to challenge your soule every day for unfruitfulness. Oh, we should in way of thankfulness, with all our hearts, soules, and strengths, be alwaies in serving him: wee must strive to the highest, and then God will pardon all wee come short in. And though you recount varieties of sorrows which you have found; yet know, that God striketh not with his whole hand, but fillipeth you rather with a finger: our blest...
Saviour hath drunk the dregs for us. Again, you are not alone: Jacob, that good Patriarch, had divers afflictions; Flight out of his Country; injury from his Father Laban; fear of death at the hands of his Brother Esau; a Cast-away, in regard of mercy; his Children's bloudy Rio; his Wives death; Joseph despightfull packing into Egypt, &c. And Peter faith, We are made heavy with many Temptations, when neede is: Which should yet more comfort us, because that the necessity of our estate doth require that wee should have variety of Arrows. Indeed, wee must be sorry that our soules are so sicke, that they must take so many things: but must be thankful to God, that is, not weary, but doth follow us with things, one after another, for our good; for your good. All things shall worke together, to the good of those that love God: Your comforts must not be in this life; here.
here is not that Rest for God's people: wee will let Diuellers sing a Requiem to their soules; but wee will pray to God for grace, that we may carry our crosse, and take evil no lesse thankfully than good from his hand: neither must your comfort be tacked upon the presence of a man; the God of all consolation is your Comforter, that Spirit which Christ will send unto you, from him. And let all your sorrowes be welcome for this fruit, which in the end you shall finde by them: viz. That your departure from this world shall be so much more easie when it commeth, by how much you are before by such crosse encounters killed in your affection to it. Such as must have a member cut off, they willingly yeeld to have it bound, though it be painfull; because, when it is mortified and deaded with strait binding, they shall endure the cutting off of it off farre more easily so shall wee take our cutting off from this
this World so much more gently, by how much more painfull pin-
chings wee have endured. Weil, the God which teacheth us to pro-
fit, as Esay faith; which purgeth us by these meanes, and maketh us
more fruitful; he make you more fruitful by this his hand, in every
good word and worke.

Your loving Brother,
Paul Bayne.

31.

Loving Sister; ill Glosses marre a good Text: so my ill con-
struction had almost done by your good Letter. Yet I am not sorry
that I missed your meaning; for it grieves me not so much for to mis-
construe your phrase, as it gladdeth mee, that no such inordinacy of
griefe came nigher you, as I imagi-
ned and feared. That which you conceiv'd in saying, Already, I did
conjecture it likewise, but did not
plainly
plainly express it; because I knew persons in griefe must be gingerly handled, lest wee make a Wound where there is none, or exasperate that which is already swaged. I thank you for my Hand-kercher: In recompence of your love, I will commend unto you a good Midwife, if you will send for her; it is my Lady Faith, who is the Sovereigne Lady and Commandress in all things which the just man doth, or suffereth. The just in troubles shall live by his Faith. That which I live in the flesh, even in respect of this eternall life, Worldward, I live it by faith in the Son of God, faith S. Paul, Gal. 2.

Now, this great Worthy doth come to none but those who first prepare for her, addressing themselves to her liking; secondly, send for her; thirdly diet her to her contentment: for shee will quickly be gone, if you make not such provision which is gratefull unto her. For the first: Sister, great Midwives on
on Earth, they come to great ones, where their wages shall be bountiful, their gifts liberal; where they shall have worshipful respect put upon them, and all things of the best suititing to their contentment. And they come not willingly, but where there is some likelihood they may goe thorow with their business. But my Lady requireth no provision nor qualification in the persons shee visiteth, but that they be poore in spirit, and see themselves at such a passe, that they know not what to do without her. We know not what to do, but our eyes are towards thee, O Lord; when sense, and our owne strength are at a stand, then there is fit roome made for Faith to enter. You must thinke therefore, good Sister, what a dead lift this case is, to which you approach. You know, good Rachel was taken away in it. It is the chastisement of the great God; which if he should not put under with one hand, as he strikes with the other, we
we could not indure it: Yea, delivery in this case (but that is so ordinary) would deservedly be counted miraculous. Wherefore you must not think of it as of a matter of course, which you need no further to looke about, than to get help, and the accustomed means unto you: No, no; you must labour to thinke that you are in such a stress, out of which none can help you, but the strong Helpe of Israel. Secondly, you must tend for her: Now she dwelleth in Heaven, whether you must dispatch your hearty prayer, saying to the Lord: Thou knowest, O God, how my heart is fallen from thee, in the affiance of it, and how prone it is to leane to such helps of the creature, as I see before me; though these, without thee, can doe nothing. O Lord, though I know there is no Rocke beside thee, yet I am so dead in unbeliefe and false confidence, that I cannot trust on thee. Helpe therefore my unbeliefe, and increase my faith.
faith. Now when he doth give you grace, seele faith comming toward you, you must cherish it with such food whereby it groweth: now faith feedeth on Gods promise, on experience, and on considerations which are deduced out of Gods Word. Thus you must thinke: Lord, thou dost make the Hindes to Calve; As thou hast chastened us with pain in travel, so thou hast promised that we shall passe the pikes, and bring forth, though with sorrowes. A-gaine, you must thinke, how you have found God faithfull and mercifull in this kinde. Finally, you must reason thus: That hee who hath put that mercy into a sinfull man, to helpe a Beast in the travel of it, when it is hard; will hee faile to give you (a Daughter believing on him) all the helpe that is good for you, and which maketh with his glory? The Lord acquaint you with himselfe, in the daily experiences you have of his Mercy.
Mercy and Truth. Thus hoping my Midwife commeth not too late, I commit you to God.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayne.

32.

Deare Sister, I doe desire to grieve with you, in your griefe; and to have, in some measure, a glad and thankfule heart in your rejoicing. It is but since my comming to Towne, that I heard of your bruised body and diseased minde: my eyes are cast up to him, who breaketh not a bruised Reede, that he would eafe your minde; to him that maketh the broken bones to rejoice, that hee would returne you your accustomed health and comfort.

Deare Sister, wee must in all accidents of this nature, remember, that our God doth not chalften, as having pleasure, chalstening simply: but
but when neede is, hee reiterateth our correction, making us heavie at sundrie times, and by sundry occasions and manners, according as our necessity requireth: We shall finde in the end, we could not have lacked any one thing, which in this nature hath befallen us.

Wherefore wee must not be too much cast downe in these Corrections; but rather admire our heavenly Fathers love, who is not weary of nurturing such unreach-able children; who is not weary of following the cure of our incurable Diseases; incurable, were he not such a healing God, who could subdue every thing to himselfe. Yea, though our Consciencs doe know, that there is a cause why he chasteneth and putteth such bitter Potions into our hands; yea, that befalleth us, which is observed in unskilfull Patients, wee misse the Marke often, when we conjecture the grounds of our owne griefes. It is not want of love, Sister, to S. S. which
which is any part of Gods quarrell (though we can, none of us, love either the begetter, or those that are begotten, as we ought; for all our delight should be in them:)

It is some defect, Sister, in the daily course, and in the frame and constitution of the heart towards God. When wee do not, by imprinting in our hearts the remembrance of our scarres fore-paide, preserve in our soules that lowlineffe and povery of spirit which it becommeth us to have before God, and which sometimes wee did feele in conscience of those our provocations; then we give him just occasion to meditate on some new Correcions. When our hearts grow a graine too light; when our water (as it were) looketh but a little too high; our heavenly Father, a Physician no lesse loving than cunning, he doth discerne it, and quickly fitreth us whom hee most tendeth, with that which will reduce all to the healthsome temper of a broken
broken spirit. Alas, Sister, such is the folly in the best of our hearts, that our beating will no longer dwell with us to purpose, than the smart lasteth; and as that weareth away, so we see grow into a kinde of lightnesse, security, and liberty, which are fore-runners of some ensuing rebuke. That God which teacheth his children to profit, and which giveth wisdome to us that want it, without upbraiding us; he open our eyes, to see our estates this way, that so he may furnish us with true understanding. Well, though these things come often, yet be not dismayed; it is Gods preventing love, who will have no feast of sicke matters breed in us, which should then dismay us, when we most of all stand in neede of comfort. A body conveniently purged every Spring and Fall, is not so subject to contract matter of deadly sicknesse, as another, which hath long gone, on without help of any such evacuation. Wee say, it is a mise-
miserable life, to live still in course of Physicke; but we may turne the speech in spirituall consideration, and say, Blessed are they, who are never without some bitter thing or other from God, that they may be restored, and preserved from the second Death. And for myselfe, Sistar, you have superabounded to me in your love; your actions and fruits have not been sparing, but your affection I did ever perceive towards me in all sincerity. I am sorry that I havelew ed you no more, and that my health doth not give mee leave to visit you, and come upon you, without waiting any further inviteme. I have long waded in a conflicting course; and I thanke my God (who hath wrought in me) the labour of my minde, in some regards, hath not beene little; this make mee not able to minisster to my deare friends, as otherwise I should. When the hearts necessity requireth a conflu ent of blood to it, the hands & such exter -
Exterior members are left pale and bloodless to appearance; you may apply it; when support of our own states calls for our strength, we cannot doe that abroad, which otherwise were behoofefull. Nevertheless, Sitter, if God ease not your minde, that you can walke in some tolerable fashion under the burthen; and if withall, you think my presence might be reliefe to you that way, I will for a while adventure to you, if God spare me health in any measure. If God so looke upon your spirit, as that you feele your selfe in some sort sufficiently strengthened, then out of your love forbeare that, which you may otherwise in love command. Thus leaving you to your God, who teacheth us to profit, and giveth hearts as well as corrections; and wishing you much quiet fruit of righteoufnnes in his season, I take my leave, this 30. of October.

Your Christian Friend, and loving Brother, Paul Bayne.
My deare Sifter; the Lord, who helpeth us with every good desire, helpe me with prayer, which may find favour in your behalfe, through Christ. Should no place hold me, in which I found not ease and content, I could not make abode long under the Moon: for though I have sowne the seede of both, I know that I am not yet to scape so much as the first fruits of my Harvest; I have need of faith and patience, to make me inherit every promise. The Lord be our strong Arme every morning, and teach us so to looke to him, that we may feele our spirituall strength renewed. This I speake not of contentment grounded in godlinesse, for I have that in my measure, I thanke God; but in regard of that content which resulteth from the pleasing rellish of outward circum-
stances. The sweete waies of my youth
youth did breed such wormes in my Soule, as that my heavenly Father will have me yet a while continue my bitter Worme-seede, because they cannot otherwise be thorowly killed. I write this the rather for your take; for truely I find, that the conscience of my state and need doth helpe mee much to digest such grievances as would goe too much against stomacke, had not God acquainted mee with this ground of patience. For your weakenesse, Sifter, I hope God will make it end in strength. It is kindly for Phylsice to inseeble a while: Howsoever, hold the Rock and strength of the heart, the Lord Jesus. Hee who healed all Maladies, when hee was abased on Earth; He, whose glory hath not diminished either mercy or ability in him, Hee letteth us be weake, that hee may make us strong: our extremitie, is his opportunitie; where mans helpe endeth, Gods power begins. The Father of merci-
Goderel, our rocke of Comfort.

...and make you able a little to wrestle with him for strength, at least for spiritual comfort: Hee will be a Rocke, & strength, when heart and flesh shall fail; he will give you the Brest of Consolation, and comfort you, when no artificiall Confections can exhilarate your spirit; hee Will be Anodyne to you, easing you of all your paine and griefe, seasonably; a shadow at the right hand, against all heat which troubleth; a present reliefe. Our weake mindes creeping still below in earthly succours, are much more soaked with evils than they should, could they cry to God, and get themselves, by vertue of his promises, as it were, by certaine scaling-ladders, mounted up unto him. The raine cannot lye so long on high mountaines, as wee see it to doe in lower grounds; so is it in these waters of our afflictions. For the Fit you expect, God who worketh above that we can aske, or thinke;
hee, I hope, will be better to you than you looke for. Sometimes, when we presume upon freedome, he doth with-hold it from us: and sometimes when wee reckon on no other, but to returne to our yoake, and take up our crosse, he doth dis-misse us: but if it doe come, and at the good time, welcome it, though it be a troublesome guest; I doubt not but God will make it please you wel at parting. Neither be too much moved at those other petty afflictions: I should rather chuse to have my house Gods Hospitall, than a Court of such pleasure wherein Gods feare is almost exiled. Bitter herbs are better, while they breed good blood, than the sweetest meate which ingendereth bitter vomit, and mortall sicknesse. The Lord give us wise hearts, which may rather chuse afflictions than vanity, which may not think much to dwell in house sometime with godly mourning. Well Sifter, you have had your measure in god-
The afflicted shall be comforted.

ly sorrow, as a foster-father to the soul: I do assure you this blessing in the Name of the Lord, you shall receive comfort; thy latter end shall be peace, thy winding-sheet shall be as God's handkerchief, to wipe all tears from thy eyes, through Christ our Redeemer. Which I speak not, to weaken your Faith touching temporall deliverance, which God useth to shew the righteous (when it is good) though they fall into five, yea, into seven adversities: but that your Faith, confirmed in that which is principall, may make you depend on God more confidently for his Redemption from these present evils (which is accessory, and lesse principall) and that so farre as it may stand with his glory.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayme.

M 2 34. Loving
Loving Brother: The occasion of Whites coming home, doth move me to write some few words to you; partly, for your better satisfaction, touching our affaires; partly, for our Christian Admonition, which is always needfull: according to that; Admonish one another, whilst it is called to day, lest our hearts be hardened, through the deceitfulness of sinne. The grace of God, which saveth us by the forgivenesse of sinne; and the gift of adoption, which making us Sonnes, bringeth us to have the Spirit of Christ here, the earnest-penny of that mass of glory we looke for hereafter: This grace doth teach us, that is, effectually persuade, yea, and constrain (as Paul speaketh) the love of God doth constrain us; all such as taste it, doe walke not onely justly towards men, but godly in the duties.
The love of God will mean us duties concerning God's worship, publike and private; and sobely, in using all the blessings and liberties of this present life, which God of his mercy doth vouchsafe us. Now, many of us are taken tardy, because, that though wee have care of faire and just dealings, yet, if wee examine ourselves in godliness and temperance, wee may be put in the blacke Bill for Non-proficients. For what is godliness? An inward devotion of heart to God, which maketh the godly soule both use diligently all parts of his worship, private and publike, and also in every thing to seek his glory. So to walke temperately towards ourselves, is to be soberly appointed towards the things of this life, which wee use: as neither to play the Harbengers and Purveyours, to provide for the lusts of our hearts, before we have them; nor yet to goe too deep in them, when wee have them; nor finally, to be moved much, if wee have
have not this or that which wee desire. If we have tafted the sweet grace of God in Christ, you must needs finde your heart drawne on to care, to please God by holinesse and sobriety, and weanednesse from the things of this present World.

Gods love constraineth us to love.

Cos amoris Amor : That you shall say, What have I in heaven but him? in earth in comparison of him? We love him, because he hath loved us first. And if you have felt the sweet of his grace, which is better than life, it will weane you in some measure, and make you sober minded in these earthly affaires and delights. I count all things drosse and dung in comparison of Christ and his righteousness. A mans mouth doth not water after homely provisions, when hee hath tafted well of delicate sustenance; so, whose heart hath shed into Gods favour, which is better than the vintage or harvest, than all earthly profits and pleasures: he whose heart feeleth this,
cannot but be more weanedly disposed towards things transitory, than those whose portion is in these matters, who know no greater happiness: wherefore let me intreat you, as you will assure your selfe that you are a Scholler, taught by the grace of God; let me, I say, intreat you to stirre up your selfe to godlinesse, not to the outward naked profession and shew of it, but the power of it is God's Image renewed in the spirit of your mind, 2 Tim. vers. 3. 5. Then as your face in a glasse looketh to your selfe, whose figure it is, so let your soule ever be looking towards God, whose image it beares: stir up your selfe to him: such as love not the Lord Jesus, let him be accursed. Would not you be ashamed to love another more than your owne betrothed wife? Shal we not blush to have our affection more towards the creature, than God our Creator and Redeemer? to whom we have plighted our faith, as being baptized
Love God above all things.

...his Name; which is likewise called upon us, as a man's name upon the woman with whom he is coupled? Now true love is efficacious and diligent, not contented with good works which are good cheap, but it will contraine us to doe all good services that are pleasing to God. The love of God constraineth us, yea, in private, to doe like as Abraham the friend of lover of God, Gen. 18. 19. Yea, to hate that which is evil: Yee that love the Lord, hate iniquity, and doe faire to offend God. Res est solliciti, plena timoris amor: As it expelleth that slavish fear, which is more of punishment than offence, love casteth out fear; so, sober and watchfull, put on Christ: Take no care to fulfill the lusts of the flesh, use the World as not abusing it; be married as if you married not; yea, cut your flesh shorter in some things, your minde superfluously desireth, like David. Remember S. Paul, Phil. 4. 12. who was so weaned to all
Wee must not use lawfull things

all things through Christ, that hee could doe as well in want of all things, as in abundance. Doe not all you may doe, lest you quickly commit that you may not doe. All things are lawfull, but I will be servant to nothing; be not unprofitable towards God: Trees without fruit shall be cut downe; many shall seeke to enter, and shall not enter. Short shooting loseth many a game. I call on you, lest your thoughts of marriage, your festivall recreation, your companies, restes, bring you asleep: An easie thing when the Candle is forth, and all still without din, to fall a napping; which will prove to your cost when God shall send forth summons for sluggards. My wife is weake, but God doth beare her up with meeknesse, thankfulness, and hope, in all her afflictions. We both remember you, and wish your heart may not be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. Blessed is hee that feareth alwaies, but hee that

M 5 harde-
hardeneth his heart, shall fall into evil. Farewell, commend us to Mr. M; his wife, &c. Brother, remember one thing is necessary; what if we could win the World, and lose our soules? Think often that Christ doth denounce wo on the World, whom hee taketh not in whoredome, drunkennesse, extortion, &c. but whom hee findeth with their hearts asleepe, in eating and drinking, building, bargaining; that is, following lawfull things, but with neglect of godlinesse, and therefore unlawfully. Reade these places. You have turned the quotation of many a Statute, reade them againe and againe. Corporall meat tasteth in the mouth, these are sweet in the belly: A man cannot eate his Cake and have it. But you may eate these words often; and the oftener you feede on them by meditation, the more sweet nourishment you shall find in them.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Baine.
Eloved Brother, though I have taken my course hitherto, and been more indulgent to my selfe in privacy than heretofore; yet assure your selfe, you are in my best remembrance daily. My heart doth intend to do you the best services I shall be able, in way of your soule; I hope I shall execute them in good time: I would be sorry the Steed should sterve while the grass groweth, as wee we speake in the Proverb. Wherefore I do admonish you, that you would stir up your heart to repentance daily, and that you would labor to feele that your affections are now set upon God: this is the touchstone by which we may try the truth of our Religion, and of that Faith we have to God: that course which is estranged to these, is all the country wide of the way to salvation; this is the way thither. If you wil escape the wrath
to come, repent, and doe workes worthy repentance. If you repent not, yee shall perish. Now the exercise of this, is thus much: viz. A renewed griefe for all unworthienesse past and present; to come home neerer & neerer to God daily. Can we doe easier penance, than to let our hearts smite us with the thoughts of our ignorance, our carelesness of God, and neglecting of his service? of our great unprofitablenesse, which alone is carefull? For the Tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is as well cut downe to the fire, as that which is loaded with bad. We cannot shife, but grieve in these considerations, if our hearts love God. If we faile a friend in duty of love, it grieves us; but if we doe him a displeasure and trespass, justly alienating his minde from us, it doth cut us at the heart, that we have forgot our selves so farre, and we besbrow our selves for it: shall we then take no care for the things wee omit and commit.
commit against God? Malice only is careless of shrewd turns done to such whom she maligneth. The nature of Love, is to grieve at the least offence given, there where she loveth: What if she offend him not so grievously, as we see others, shall we therefore not be grieved, though we hold on in a course in some measure offensive? Man hath right to a penny as well as a pound, and may be wronged as well in the one as in the other: And will not the same rule hold towards God? You must the rather hear on this side, because that the sparkling of God's anger in your Towne, was a Summons sent forth for us sleepers, that will not awake ourselves, and prepare to meete our God in hearty humiliation. The Famine and Sword, and Plague, you know are the three greatest Arreets that God serveth on such as breake his Covenants impenitently. This, Brother, is the onely way to avoid danger, to looke unto Gods grace with
with a sorrowful heart, acknowledging, that you have served him loosely and unfruitfully. If a Creditor should lay wait to arrest me, being in the City; though I changed my Chamber from the Temple to White-Chappell, though I corrupted the Sergeant with a Fee, all this could not secure me; for another Sergeant might be got, or some new course devised for mee: but if my Creditor be compounded with, I walk safely. O Brother and Sister, thus it is: we are all of us debtors unto God; Sickenesses are but his Sergeants; there is no way of defeating, if God do lay his hand upon us, but by singing unto him with faithfull and sorrowfull hearts, that it would please him, for his Christ sake, to give us a \textit{Quietus est}, and freely acquit us of all our trespasses; which stood till then, as so many Debts in his Bookes, upon our heads: then wee may sleep on both sides, and walke at large; the Coast is cleare, with-
Delay not repentance; Call out danger. Wherefore delay not this matter; let not company transport you, let not fear of painfulnesse, and forgoing delight (you are worse afraid than hurt) let not any indigisposition and slothfulnesse hinder you; shake up your selfe, Christ will helpe you, Modò & modò non habent modum; the longer you put it off, the longer you may. A man that getteth up some time, when his head seemeth full of sleepe, feeleth no want of it, when hee is well wakened; nay, is often more lightsome, than if hee had continued flagging. Wee shall lose no contentment, by offering violence to our spirituell slothfulnesse. The Lord, that tooke Los lingering, and carried him forth of Sodome, hee catch hold of you, and helpe you in this businesse. And when you have found this way, you must helpe your Wife, and call on her, to returne with you. A good man cannot tell how to goe to heaven alone: the Communion of Saints must.
must be a point of practice, as well as an Article of Belief. One Candle lighteth another: even so grace, where it is, will labour to kindle grace where it is not. We had need to returne; all that live strangers from God shall perish: as for us then, it is good that we draw neere unto him. Now if you aske how you may walke with God? I answer you; by setting your heart upon him: for as we say, There a man is, where his heart is; neither can wee have God otherwise for our God, unless our hearts be towards him; for if our hearts be on any other thing, then that is our Treasure and our God. Now if you would find out, whether God hath your heart, or no, you must trie it by these rules, by examining whether your thoughts and affections are taken up with him. If our hearts be set upon a thing, wee thinke on it often, and muse therafter on in the night season, being not able, means while, to take any reft
rest for it. So, all that fear the Lord, must be thinkers on him: though he be not in sight of the bodily eye, he must still run in our minds. If we take no thought of a thing, it is a token that it is of no respect with us. Brother, God is not so commonly knowne, but hee is as rarely thought upon; and mens hearts smite them not, when they goe day after day, not once calling to minde the powerfull remembrance of God: though the Scripture, when it doth terme men all the evill that is, doth stile them no other than such as forget God. Againe, as the thoughts must be mindfulfull of him, so the affections of love, joy, feare, and desire, must be towards him. Examine therefore, whether you finde not, that your desires are more inclining to earthly things: you feare more often, lest men should censure you, and note you of novelty and preciseness, for doing duties to God; than that hee should justly have a quarrell.
quarrell against you, for neglecting his service daily. So, if your heart joy not in the acquaintance you have with this or that man, more than in the knowledge you have of God in Christ Jesus, which is Life everlasting: Looke if your heartiest love be not bestowed rather on the creature, than on the Creator and gracious Redeemer, Jesus Christ. Now, if you finde affectionatly, how farre your heart is out of square, then you must not neglect to seeke remedy for this evill; Grieue which is at the heelles thereof, is not to be regarded. For when the most vitall part, even the heart, is touched, then wee seeke Cordialls, and beftirre us for the restoring and preserving of it: If the heart, as the Fountaine of this momentany life, be respected; what care must wee have of it, as it is a Fountaine of spirituall life, never to be ended? There is but one Physician that feeleth this heart-pulse, and is able
able to heal it; even Christ Jesus, that hath said, Hee will take from us the heart of stone, that is, our secure, impenitent, and dreadlesse hearts, continually offending our God; and will give us fleshly, that is, tender hearts, such as shall smite us when we trespass against him. We had need to cry to him; for the best of our hearts; if we knew them, are so naught, that they had need to be made anew thorow-out, for they are past mending. Labour to find out this mortall poison, which extinguisheth all life of grace. The love of the World, and the love of the Father, fight like fire and water, they will not dwell together. Keepe the heart with all diligence, for thence are the issues of life; pray to God to change it, pray to him to keepe the frame of it: restraine that which increaseth the sinfull distemper of it; acquaint your selfe with such good meanes, by which your thinking upon God, and your hearty...
The violent take heaven.

affections towards him, may be cherished and increas'd. I will shortly send you a Letter of fuller direction this way. It is better to seele Gods favour one honr in our repenting soules, than to fit whole Ages under the warmest Sun-shine this World affordeth. Commend me to my loving Sister; she must thinke of this matter too: not those that are careless and clothfull, but the violent, that catch at it by force, they carry away the Kingdom. Many that seeke, shall not enter: what will become of us, if we seeke not; in words and profession? All Christians looke to Heaven: indeed wee are all for the Earth: this taketh up our thoughts and affections, that wee are like Boat-men, that looke one way, but row another.

The Lord be with both your spirits. Farewell.

Your loving Brother,
Paul Bayne.
Las, deare Brother, I desire for to condole your chance with you in the sight of my God, wishing him out of his grace, to enterlace the sense of his sweet love with your bitter discomfort, and to give you the quiet fruit of righteousness, following in the end of this your chastisement. The Lord doth give us many things, and that onely to prove us, that by them we may be led unto knowledge of our hearts, either to see our owne weakenesse, and thereby reverence and love the Giver, and so to be comforted when hee taketh them from us; or to discover, by them the unweanenedness of our affections, by living in security, and forgetfulness of God; that finding such things, wee may be moved to godly sorrow; the end of which, is salvation. Event, which is one Booke that openeth Gods secret pleasure, doth now
now speake thus much; That God did never intend that you should long in joy that gift hee gave you; hee did it to try what was in you, to make you see it, either to your comfort, or to your further humiliation before him. The spirit of man knoweth the things of man; you have a privitie within yourself, which can determine one way this case, which in itself is indifferent. Now to helpe you (as God shall guide) under this hand, you must mark what this course, on Gods part doth most probably tend to; and in the second place, what you are to doe, that out of your great losse, you may worke to your selfe true advantage. For the first, the Lord doth point out thus much; that there is corruption still lying in you, that must be purged forth; and that he out of his fatherly love cannot cease, but minister medicine to you, to the end that hee may bring away that which would otherwise hazard your soules health.
God afflicts none without cause.

We are not made heavy with many things, unless our need so require, faith S. Peter, Chap. 1. 5. A wise Physician will not give Potion after Potion, where bad matter is sufficiently evacuated; much less will God reiterate such strong purges, if he did not see that our need did enforce it. Wherefore, deare Brother, you must learne to see Gods mercy in following of you, and the need your soule hath thus to be dealt withall; you must be-thinke you, how that his former blow did not worke so to purpose upon you, as was meet: which doth make him deale like the cunning Physician, who when there is not blood enough taken away, doth Repetere vices, open the Veine, and make it bleede afresh. You must bethinke you, what scape did o- vestake you in youth, that your God should make a temblance, as if he thought you not wor- thy of the stable fruition of so lovely a blessing, as is a Christian tractable
 tractable loving wife: Happy is he that diggeth into himselfe, to find the roots of his evils. *Morbi nostri facilis curantur quam inventuntur.*

Pray to God that you may take to heart the causes of things; then the effects shall quite cease, when the causes are removed. We that hold demurs to sound the truth of causes, and who would rather have the judgement of a whole College of Physicians, than not find out the ground of a bodily grief: how should we seke to God, that we might through his light discern what dwells in our spirits? Which is the ground of his displeasure.

Now for the second thing, how you may make the best of this visitation; you must doe this, be declining that which may hinder, and using that which may further the effectual working of this upon you to salvation. O Brother, if you take physicke, will you goe out into the aire? Will you distemper your selfe by diet? Will you hurt the
We must take affliction to heart.

the working of it in you? (Such accidents as these, are God's Physicke for your soule: O be careful to let them work in you to purpose, that your healing (when God shall shew it) may stand a Fall & Spring with you, may be continuall. If a Potion stay not with us, but come up againe untimely, what will it benefit the body? If a Seare-cloth be put upon us, and wee weary quickly, pull it off againe, what profit can it bring us? O so, when God layeth these Plaisters to our hearts, indeed somewhat smarting, if we will not let them lie on, but quench that sorrow for sin, by company, and other occasions, not dieting our soules, as who are Patients under God's hands: Alas, wee shall be as ready for a new Purge, as if we had never taken any. O Brother, I give you no worse counsel then I my selfe practis'd; if I knew any safer, you should have it. The Lord give you wisdome, that you may be able to looke before you, and delight in
such things, which though they be tedious for the present, yet they will end sweetly. I know your danger; Oh, if wee had but our owne foolish hearts, wee had enemy enough, too mighty for us, without the helpe of Jesus Christ our Lord: But a great many of Syrens sing about you a great many of matters, which will by little and little, steale the savory thought of these things out of your heart: yea, I would we had not evill spirits to keepe posession in us, with such violence, that wee can hardly make entrance for a thought of this nature. Again, it so fareth with us, that things the second time, stir us not commonly so much as at the first; as nature, the more shee is accustomed to medicine, the lesse she is moved with it: O, you must be afraid of this carriage to your Physician, strong things will poison us if they purge us not. Againe, our hearts are so hard, that till the Spirit doe soften them, these afflictions which are Gods hammers,
We must not slight God's hand.

...mest, beate cold Iron; all is boot-
leffe. O, when you seele it, cry to
him that hath promis'd to take a-
way this heart of stone: what need
I warne you how malicious the di-
vell is, to dart such thoughts thro-
row us, as if seeing it will be no
better, all's well enough? Your state
is thus augmented, your credit in-
creased, your selfe more capable of
further advancements and content-
ments in that kind; seeing you lived
kindly with her, and it is God's plea-
sure, who can undoe that which is
done? The Lord rebuke him for
you. O turne from such cursed
thoughts which tend to this, that
you may be kept slumbering and
sleeping, till God send forth some
heavier summons for the awaking
of you. Now for your helpe this
way, I have sent you a letter which
I have long intended, but hitherto
have beene prevented: The Lord
blesse it unto you. There be two
extremes under God's hand: the
one is to set light by it, the other is
to droope too much under it. Now you must go in the midst; take it to heart, but with hope, knowing that it is good to beare the yoke, and that it shall be well with such as wait silently upon the Lord: and therefore say with Micha, I will beare it, because I have sinned. Think your heavenly Father, that God that is love it selfe, hath put this cup into your hand, and say with Chrift, Shall I not drinke the cup my Father hath put into my hand? For our bodies good we drinke things which make us fet many a fowre face on them; what shall we not welcome for our soules health? Yet as you must let it downe, and hum-ble your soule, so you must com-fort your selfe another while, there is mercy with him that he may be feared. It is good to interimdle restoratives of spirituall strenght, which may raise up the soule in true comfort, as well as other while to beate downe our soules in thought which may humble them. The
The Lord hath given you from time to time pledges of his fatherly care over you: yea, such by which you may gather, that he will never forsoak you; whom he loveth, hee loveth to the end. Yea, this is his great love, and he offereth himselfe as a Father to you, that he will not let your spirit goe at randome, but correcteth the thing amisse in it; that he bring you to be partaker of the quiet fruit of righteousness, and save you from being condemned with those that are of unbroken heart, whose harts never mourned for their sin. If you cannot see this mercy, of this you must not be dismaide; though it be night, wee shall have day againe, yea, his love is the same it was, though our sense and feeling is changed. *Sic licet in natos facies anstera parentum, Mens tamen aqua manet.* I do assure you in that knowledge of my God, that if you doe but favourably judge your selfe before him, and humble your selfe in his sight: if you will a

N 3 while
while count that state best when you feel your heart devoted to him; though the countenance be dejected, that great God that comforts the abject, and exalts the humble, he will exalt you and comfort you with true joy and prosperity. Thus in haste I commit you to the Lord.

Your loving Brother, P. E.

Loving brother, I know a word or two will be more welcome than continuall silence; wherefore I will let you understand how it is with us. My wife's infirmities doe continue with her, but she hath more strength, I thanke God, and the violent working of them is even past, at least resteth for a season. It went, when I did write to you first, exceeding hard with her; but if the Lord give us faith, hee can worke above all wee can aske or thinke. It is good wee should have
We are dull and sleepy to Good.

have false fires shot off sometimes to start up our slumbering souls, which are heavy to sleepe, though we be never so wakened. Sometimes a coldnesse commeth on our spirits, which maketh them unactive unto good, like as it is in the body, the heart is sleepe sometime when the eyes are open: sometime wee take a nap in the lift of our hearts: sometime wee winke, by falling into unfruitful courses, idle words, passing good hours to no purpose: the Divell hath many wights to rocke our souls asleep, by making us rejoin our good purposes, and takeday: still a little slumber, a little folding of the hands; if we escape falling from grace, lufts unfruitfulnesse: if we will not make delates, but set upon good duties, yet even in these, our drowsie hearts make us nod oftentimes through indention.

And because I am fallen into this Theame, I pray you both take heed that yourSoules be not thus over-
taken, that the first love, the graces which at any time you either have had be not lessened. Looke in the 13. of the Revelat. 26. and not to husband our talents, or increase them, is the next fore-runner of judgement. Take heed of giving place to lusts, *He that sowereth to his flesh, shall reap destruction*, Gal. 6. 8. Take heed of unfruitfulness: the tree that beareth not good fruit, is a tree that shall be cut downe, as well as the tree that beareth bad fruit, and every idle Word shall be accounted for: let not the Divell prevaine with us to put off a good purpose; quench not the Spirit, *1 Thes. 5. 19. delayes, if any where, here they are dangerous; let us shake our selves up against that indoevation and spiritual sloth which will creepe upon us in doing good: be not slothful, be fervent in spirit: cursed is he that doth the businesse of God haftingly. Brother, we that are the Lords, though wee are not in a dead sleepe with the
the World, yet our souls have the remnants of such a lethargie as that wee are often napping in these kinds. The Lord hath need to send out summons for us sleepers, or we should be in danger by them. Awake thou that sleepest, stand up from the dead, Christ shall give thee light; he that is the true light, the quickening Spirit, having our nature glorious with him in the Heaven. The Lord our Redeemer, the quickning Spirit, quicken our souls, and keepe them through faith in his power, to that Salvation which is laid up for us in the Heavens.

Your loving Brother,
Paul Bayne.

Loving Brother, I have received your letter, full of heavie report, but that our neede is such that wee must be made heavie with sundry tempta-
The use we are to make of God's hand.

Temptations; our God doth not delight in beating us, but our necessities enforce it: God hath taken from you an innocent and sweet comfort, the natural Nurse of your nursery, a faithful dispenser of your estate: in a word, a good wife, who did you good and not evil all her days. We are bereft of a Sister, a Sister indeed (as S. Paul speaketh of Widowes) whose loffe, though I beare more weanedly, because I knew her more sparingly; yet it doth grieve mee she is gone without any fruits of my love with her. The Lord teach us to be serviceable mutually while we enjoy each other, that we come not to wish we had done so. Brother, it is my desire, and I will seek at God's hands with a fasting for you, that hee would give you repentance, and speake to your soule, humbled under his hand, that he will heale all with advantage. A great breach hath God made in your house, but his mending is better than his making.
king, I doubt not, but you know by this, that God doth call you to repentance; no bush will stop the gap so well, as humbling our souls; and judging them in this sight: now this is an exercise that requireth entering into our owne hearts, and considering what evills have slept in our bosomes, especially in those waies which the finger of God doth point out more particularly: Deut. 30. 1 Kings 8. 47. 2. To get a sight and sense of Gods hand on us, and yet of his mercy that we are not consumed. 3. From this feeling especially of his mercy, which is never taken from us in his chastisements, we must humble our selves by confession, which giveth glory to God, and shame to our selves, by censuring our owne soules: as Ezek. 26. 34. Yee shall judge your selves as worthy to be cut off: by crying for mercies, as David, Psalm. 51. And thus in humiliation come to him, and renue our covenants with our God.
We are subject to many temptations.

Now of ourselves, we are full of indisposition to this work; and all that converse about you, in comparison, will call you from this practice, in which onely is your true peace: and so you had neede to looke up to Jesus Christ, who is made the Lord, that hath all power in Heaven and in Earth, that hee may give his Israel true repentance and forgivenesse of sins, Acts 5. 31. Esay 26. 12. Not thinking much to attend upon him, as the eyes of a hand-maid on her Mistresse: For who is like unto our God? and what is more precious, than the Grace of Repentance? Againe, Brother, know, that you have no wisdom, to carry your selfe as becommeth you under this great hand of God: For on both hands the Divell will affaile you, and the folly found in our hearts, doth make his Temptations more dangerous; first, to despise the Correction of God; secondly, to count it irksome, either to ward the
Wee are apt to fleight God's hand.

smart off by impenitent meanes, or
to be swallowed up with griefe,
and filled with bitterness, in endur-
ing of it. Now for the first, we doe
it partly by inward suggestions;
perfwading our selves, that wee
shall ware the matter forth well
enough, that wee are once againe
at liberty, and are in election of
such and such preferments, (if such
things happen, not to be in your
minde, it is the God of Peace that
keepeth them out:) sometimes a-
gaine, by making this or that way
delightfull unto us; suffering our
selves to be drawne away by idle
company, which are no better than
the Divells whistle, to call us a-
way from all savory courses, yea,
his Minstrels, to lull us in our spiri-
tual slumber. Now take heed here-
of; for this were to dawbe up the
wall with untempered Mortar: The
ease which is gotten this way,
is like the easement of cold drinke
to hot Agues; it would make a
worse thing breed; for that which
stayeth
The danger of deferring humiliation.

Itayeth the working of mans Phys- 
ficke, hurteth the body; which we 
may conceive by application there-
of to the soule, if wee will not 
imbrace our afflictions patiently. 
Now, if you will not listen unto 
God, when he calleth on this man-
ner, then hee will drench you with 

torrow, especially three waies. 
First, hee will hide from your eye 
the remembrance of such things, in 
which you may take comfort; yea, 
keeping you from tasting all the 
mercies of God, with which this 
correction is intermeddled. Se-
condly, hee will helpe you with a 
Spectacle, and make you see too 
big, both the present hand, and all 
old matters & circumstances, which 
may make it seeme grievous. 
Thirdly, hee will hide from your 
eyes all comfortable hope of Issue, 
which God is most faithfull to give. 
Now therefore, deare Brother, the 
Lord Iesus grant you may finde fa-
vour in his sight, to escape evill 
shares. Make a vertue of necessity: 
be
be not afraid to see sinne, and feele the smart thereof; but remember withall, what the Law of the Spirit hath done in the course of your life: strike your covenant anew, there is hope with our God; for all this, read Ezech. 2. 3. He is faithful to give Issue; yea, though hee make heavie, yet he will comfort in the multitude of mercies, Lament. 3. 32. Turne from it, as from the D:vell, that would quench the sparks of your godly sorrow and abjection before the eyes of your God. Take heed my Sonne, of despising and making light, or accounting irksome, the chastisement of God: If yee lacke wisedome, begge it; I will give it, and not reproach you, Heb. 12. 5. James 1. 5. O cry to God, that thus you may be guided. Should you not finde this grace, hee would quickly lay your honour in the dust, and we should have cause to weep in secret: Farewill his Kingdom, farewell every thing. But if hee give you this, I dare
The more we love, the more we grieve.

dare assure you, all happiness shall follow you here, and for ever. Seeke his Kingdome, and all things shall be cast upon you, Matth. 6.

39.

My deare Sister, what thankes doe I owe to my God, for his Fatherly consolation, where-with hee doth comfort you? The Lord increase in mee brotherly love, and that grace, which may make mee sanctifie him in all his mercy and truth, which I see him shew any of his children; especially such, whom his providence hath endeared to me, above others. The increase of your godly griefe, with freedome from distrust, more than heretofore, hath nothing in it to be admired. The more wee love, the more wee grieve, that wee have offred any grievance to those whom wee love. The more wee feel Gods love in forgiving us, the
They that groans after grace,

the more we love againe: shee loveth much, because shee findeth much is forgiven her: much love sheewed her first. Distrust hindereth us from feeling God's love: God's love is eclipsed from us, ours is much enfeebled towards him: our love weake, our griefe for offending him, cannot come so kindly from us, for this is proportioned to our love. Blessed be God, who giveth you those groanes, after his grace: God acknowledgeth that which his Spirit suggesteth. When wee bid our children (as Charity for example) say, I pray you, Mother, give mee this; we doe it not, but when wee mean to give them that which wee teach them to aske. So it is with God: Hee doth not send his Spirit to our hearts, to helpe us with groanes, but when hee meaneth to answer our desires: Hee that maketh us low, will make us reape. Hungrie poore soules are glad, when they heare that meate is toward
toward them; glad when they are invited, though yet their Knife is not laid on board. Let this comfort you, Sister, your Christ faith, Come who so thirsteth, and drinke till it streameth from you, John 7. And the poore shall eate, and be satisfied, and praise my Name. They that seeke the Lord, their hearts shall live. The Lord rejoice over his owne Worke, and continue it in you unto the end. Farewell.

Your loving Brother,
Paul Bayne.

40.

Dear Sister, your cousin Denham returning, I cannot but in few words answer your Letter I received. I doe desire to be thankfull for God's truth and tender mercy towards you, and for making mee a Minister of your Consolati-
on: Though wee be unfaithfull, yet God will be found faithfull. When
God's faithfulness:

When we through weakness, follow him, not challenging him with reverence, concerning his good words which he hath spoken to us; when we wait not on the performance of his promises; even then he preventeth us with his goodness, and for his Names sake, he commeth leaping over those Mountains of Besber, viz. all our indisposition, and unworthiness. He who is thus good to us, so unbelieving; if we would mend our faith, how would he augment his mercies? This faithfulness of God should make unbeliefe odious to us, and cause us to labour against it, by looking to the Author and finisher of our faith; even then, when through God's gracious presence we feel our selves in best taking. For as a man, who hath beene handled sore once with the Stone, will labour to keepe it downe, and cleare himselfe of it, when now hee is well, and the Fit over; so, in this unbeliefe, having found how it shakes
It should excite us to Faith.

Shakes us; when we have the most release from it, then must we still be dealing with it: for though the Fit is ceased, yet the spiritual sickness still lurketh in us. Remember, good Sister, how the Devil hath disturbed your peace: how little things, not looked to more timely, have bred matter of great grievance. Labour to have still in sight that our natural folly, which maketh us remember our beating no longer, than the smart lasteth. Labour to heare your Christ saying every day to your soule; I am that Saviour, who save my people from sinne, I will be thy salvation. Finally, strive to have a thankfull acknowledgment of Gods mercy towards you: Then shall your Peace be like the Sunne, which shineth brighter and brighter, till the height of it be attained.

My desire is to doe good to your soule, both in my presence with you, and absence from you. If you could marke your selfe, and let me know
Wee must profit by correction.

Know what most hindereth you; where you finde your selfe weakest, I should fit you better with advice, when God gave me ability to ponder that estate. I continue, Sister, better than sometimes I have beene, but held under the hand of God: For that painfull weaknesse in the bottoome of my body, doth still follow mee. The Lord teach mee to doe his will, and indure his pleasure: And hee that will have sinfull men joyne with Correction, Nurture and Instruction, hee make me profit by all his chastisements. The Lord delight to make us ever with good hearts confesse his truth and mercy towards us. The Lord blesse you with increase of comfort, and blesse all yours, with you.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayne.
Loving Sister, I am glad that God doth add somewhat to your health; for I hope it is a pledge of further favour. The Lord open our eyes, that we may see him to be our life, and the length of our days. You must not let want of company make you less lightsome: we use not company well, when we are not fitted, by enjoying it, the more thankfully to forbear it, when the pleasure of God is, that we should be bereaved of it for a while. Your best Husband, hee is with you still, at Bed and Board, ready to vouchsafe you the sweetest Communion. The Lord of his tender love draw you after him, and speake peace and salvation to your spirit. I have kept from you the extremity of my Visitati- on; but the Candle hath not gone out by night, since the Thursday after my comming from you: till within
within these two nights, for a good space, I have beene forced to have some watch by mee. Yet, Sifter, these are but the beginnings of sorrowes, these are not the sicknesses that I have long looked for. The Lord make mee precious in his sight, to be made able to suffer and doe every thing in his Christ. My heart followeth God, desirous to be taught of him wholly, to endure all his pleasure. I thanke you for your loving remembrance, which you still have of mee. The Lord stirre up my heart, that I may remember you to him, and that I may be ready to helpe you with whatsoever Office of true love shall lie in my power. Thus with my love remembred, I commend you, and all my Cousins with you to the gracious protection of the Almighty.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayne.
Love is a thing we may lawfully owe; and because this is a fruit of love to consider one another, and provoke to good workes, to exhort one another, that we be not hardened through the deceitfulness of sin: Therefore I wish that other things not neglected, my love may be most fruitful in this kinde. Let me then call to your mind the duties you know well, that you may more and more be a practitioner of them. The Scripture, 2 Cor. 13. 5. 6. biddeth us prove our selves, and telleth us, that if Christ be not in us, wee are counterfeits: It becommeth us therefore to see on what ground wee stand, that wee may make sure workes with our God. If false gold walked abroad, wee should not take a Piece, but trying it; so wise wee are, that we may not be deceived in earthly things, when wee hand over head admit
We may know whether we be Christ's.

admit any thing as currant in the way of salvation. Now wee may easily know if wee be in Christ, or Christ in us: for as where the Sun shineth it may be discerned hence, because the darknes doth disperse, all things are lightsome: Even so, where this Sun of Righteousnesse shineth, the darke clouds of ignorance and sinne are scattered, the light of knowledge and grace shineth. If you be in Christ, you have crucified the flesh, with the lust of it, Gal. 5. 24. If you be in Christ, you are a new creature, 2 Cor. 5. 20. Wherefore, Brother, because I know there is little wind abroad to drive this Mill, the Lord by his Spirit worke all things for us.

Your loving Brother,
Paul Bayne.
Well, you should let me hear from you, and know how you feel your soul affected; who can fit a shoe that knoweth not the foot? how can I fit you with helpful counsel, while you conceal from me your daily condition? You would not willingly have a Physician prescribe blindfold, roving in uncertain without a mark; but you care not what you put upon my invention. Brother, how do you feel your soul every day? doth it grow up in the life of God? hath it more desire of him, thought concerning him, more love, repentance, holy shame-fastness? If the body be in an Atrophy, and not like, what means sover we use, what a griefe would it be unto us? shall we not grieve if our souls grow not up in the life of grace? Doe you feel some little good thing more than you have done
The life of grace requires done heretofore? It must comfort us, and we must confess it with thanks, giving to God glory. If we mention by Letter, and bless God in our bodily health, how much more must his kindness in our souls be acknowledged? I pray you let me & you fall into Letter-colloquies of this nature. Brother, the life of Grace in the heart doth ask daily diligence to maintain it. Doe you not see in nature, Animalis enjus, vita est fuga? Were it not for the repair by nutrition, the natural life would be soon extinguished. So doe you not feel the life of God in your soul? You cannot find any vigor of it sooner, than you shall feel a secret exhaustion and decay creeping upon you. Now as we take bodily reflection daily, and count it not grievous, so we must work upon our hearts before God, that we may feel by this means, from him a daily renewing of the best strength in us. The good God of nature hath put a de-light
light in those bodily functions, in which is the preservation of our persons: this makes us not abject the: but because our soules are to the means of grace, as a sicke stomack is affected to meate, because it is painfull a little to us, therefore the belt duties are fore-flowed. The Lord save us from this mouth of spirit, we will eate without appetite: one bit, they say, will drive downe another. Let us doe thus with our soules, and we shall finde that easie which hath seemed painfull. Without cracking the shell, wee cannot come to the kernel. The Lord keepe you in his feare and favour.

44.

Good Master Dom. I cannot but write unto you, things going as they doe, though otherwise I should have used some forbearance, because of my impoyments: The first part of your Letter did rejoice mee, and the latter grieve
The voice of thanksgiving.

grieve me: For I desire to practise the duty of remembering the afflicted, as if my selfe were afflicted in body; according as wee are commanded, Hebr. 13. 3. I am glad God hath not onely kept you hither to, but shed into your heart his Fatherly love in Christ: so that you vow (through his grace) thankfulness unto the end. A voice taught by Gods Spirit; for you may see the same working in the heart of the Prophet, on like experience of Gods goodness: Psal. 146. 2. I will praise the Lord during my life, as long as I have any being, I will sing to my God. It is a seemly thing to breake out into those voices: what shall wee give the Lord for all his benefits shewed to us? Deliverance is comfortable, but Gods loving kindnesse is better than life. Therefore wee must bow our knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, that wee may know more this love of God in Christ, which passeth all knowledge.
Whom God loves once, he loves ever.

ledge. It was God's great mercy to let you drink of his favour in any measure, before hee changed his right hand; I mean his dealing with you: for whom hee once loveth, there is nothing shall for ever make a separation betwixt his love and the party. Neither life, nor death, neither any thing present, nor any thing which may fall out hereafter, shall be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ: for all God's gifts, his love, and the fruits of it, concerning that better life, they are without repentance. You must then not let your selfe be too much cast downe, but comfort your selfe in the Lord your God. I pray you read the first of Sam. the 30. Chap. and the 6. ver. I am not ignorant Mr. Dowson, that a wife is very neere, and so a husband to a wife. I in part consider it, though I cannot weigh it as I should. Againe, I know that even the deare Saints of God have not beene able to bridle this passion: Jacob would goe
Be not fixed on earthly things.

Goe weeping to the grave after his sonne, and would not be comforted. Yet wee must know what is the will of our God: namely, that seeing the fashion of all earthly things passeth away, and seeing that through Christ he doth cover our spirits, and give us hope of a better enduring life: that therefore wee should rejoice, as if wee rejoiced not; and weep as if wee wept not; wee should not over-much be affected with the possessing or removall of these things which are Earthly.

FINIS.
HOLY
SOLILOQUIES:
OR,
A HOLY HELPER
in Gods Building.
Written in a Letter
by Mr. Paul Bayne, sometime
Preacher of Gods Word at Saint
Andrewes in Cambridge.
Effectually instructing, and
earnestly provoking to true Re-
pentance, Love, and new
Obedience.
The fourth Edition, enlarged by a more
perfect Copy.

LONDON,
Printed by E. G. for I. N. and are to be
sold by Sam. Enderby in Popes-Head-
Alley, at the Signe of the Star, 1637.
The Preface to M. IORD.

Loving Brother, nature her self is such a Schoolmistresse, that she teacbeth her Creatures industry in their kind: the dumb elements are carried about with indefatigable motion: The Ant, and other creatures, are exceeding industrious. As nature maketh a man incline to action; so wisedome maketh him to choose his worke, to leave that which is dead and to lesse advantage, and to choose that which is most com-
commodious. Humane wisedom (unable to go beyond her compasse) can but point us to civil human works, the fruit whereof is a good proportionable, to wit, civil or external. The wisedom which is from above and heavenly, guideth our hands to a higher plough, and biddeth us exercise our selves ingodlinesse, meeting God with repentance, stirring up our hearts, that they may be affectioned towards him. And because the worke is transcendent and of higher nature than these secular, and wee are ready to thinke with Peter, Master, we do thw and
THE PREFACE.

But, what shall we have? God: (that we might better like the work) doth mend our wages, assuring us that godliness is great gaine of itself, bringing contentment: yea, he doth promise us the things of this life, and of that which is to come, if we will learne this occupation. Now he that will increase grace and godliness in his heart, must labour his soule this way with wrestling and contention. It is not every walking and moving in a Christian course, by which grace is augmented more sensible; but stirring ourselves up, and putting so forth the grace
THE PREFACE.

Grace we have, that in some sort we feel the utmost it will reach to: as natural strength is not increased with every sedentary motion, that is, such stirring, as is next to sitting still, but with such exercise, which if it be not ad ludo ré, yet is, ad ruborem, where it is most moderat. Wherefore as you would have the soul thrive, breathe it well in meditation, and other duties of devotion. We have indeed stiffe aking joints, that paine us to stir in this kind: but the more warmth wee get, the more all grieve will be abated. Now there is no one branch
of devout exercise more fruitful than that of Soliloquie, wherein we commune with our owne soules, and excite them towards God. Words serve not onely to make knowne the conceptions of our minds, but to give glory to God who understandeth our thoughts a far off; and to blow up devotion, and kindle our cooling affections towards him. Inordinat passions come like foule weather, before wee send for them, they often prevent all action of the will: but good affections are so overlaid with sin which compasseth us about, that if wee gather not wind under their wing (so
THE PREFACE.

ponderous the flesh is they cannot mount up to the purpose: for the warrant of this duty, wee have both precept & practice; take words to yourselves, Hos. 13.3. Heb. 3.13. Examples both sacred, Plal. 42.11. Gen. 24.49. and Ecclesiasticall; as Iustine, and many others To leade your hand in this matter, I give you this letter, which containeth a forme of Soliloquies serving to further your daily repentance, and sound affection towards God; keepe it for your private use. And the Lord Iesus, the quickning Saviour, be with it to the end above named.

Your loving Brother,
Pauel Bayne.

We live in the last, and most perilous times, in which the power of godliness is much decayed; and, Love, Mat. 24. 12. through abundance of iniquity, much cooled. Now, there is no one thing which more breedeth this consumption of Grace, and growth of the contrary, than the want of such Spirituall Exercises as awaken grace, and renew the strength of it in us, from one degree to another. For as not blowing,
blowing, brings the fire to be extinct in time, no lesse than the procuring of cold water to be powred upon it: so the lothfull, not rowing up themselves, killeth grace, as well as the wilsfull, living in some knowne sin; death followeth upon both. The difference is; one is violent and speedy, the other is (as we speake of Consumptions) gentle, and lingring, but no lesse certaine. Now, though there are many meanes whereby the soule doth shake up itselfe, yet there is none more fruitfull, than for a Christian to accustome himselfe to Soliloquies, taking words to our selves, between God and our owne soules. Words serve not onely to open our minde, that others may conceive our meaning, but to honour God (who understandeth us, without them) and are, as it were, Bellowes to blow up our affections, when their devotion cooleth. Sinful passions will prevent our wills, and come (as wee say of foule Weather)
Soliloquies commanded, practiced.

ther) before they are sent for. But for holy affections (so ponderous is our corruption, which presseth downe) unless we labour the thing with our hearts, they will not rise to any purpose in us. God therefore hath commanded it upon us; and complaineth, when it is neglected. Hos.14. 2. Take words to your selves: None awaketh himselfe to lay hold on God: None faith, Jerem. 8. 6. What have I done? And the most excellent men of God have abounded in solitary Conferences with God and their Soules; as both sacred and Ecclesiasticall Story teach, by the examples of David, and others, Saint Austen, Anselme, and Bernard. The fruit of this Exercise, hath made mee set downe (for the helpe of Novices, who have not beene exercised this way) a Forme of Words, which might containe fit Soliloquies, to further us in found Repentance, and good Affections towards God. First,
therefore, to deal with you in Repentance; then, to help you forward in Love, and new obedience.

The Lord preacheth Repentance still unto us. If a Messenger knock at our door, and answer be returned, he is gone forthwith to those that sent him. So, if the Plague, and such like Messengers, which God sendeth to us, had that which they come for, they would not still ring the Bell at our doors, and call upon us. Neither doth God wait for Repentance onely from the wicked, but he would have his dearest Children meete him, condemning themselves, Luke 13. 5. If yee repent not also more and more, when yee see the examples of Gods wrath, yee shall also perish.

First, to shew you what this is, I shall by this means stirre you up unto it more fruitfully. By Repentance, I mean nothing else, but godly sorrow for sinne, wherein the soul
The Nature of Repentance.

The soul humblyth itself before God, and commeth home to him. It is not a worldly sorrow, like theirs in Hosea 7:14, which maketh us whine, because the World is hard; nor yet a hopeless grief, for fear of punishment: but a grief for sin, as it displeaseth God; whose love through Christ, we have felt in our hearts; whose mercy wee see it is, that we are not consumed; yea, whose fatherly affection doth seek to call us home by loving Correction.

Now in this sorrow, the soul doth humble itself: For this is the nature of Repentance; it will make us take shame to our selves, partly, by reasonable acknowledgement of those ways, wherein we have most provoked God; partly, by judging our selves as worthy to be cut off, that we may find grace in his eyes, and not be condemned: And together, with grieving and abasing itself, the stray-soul commeth home to God.
purposing through his strength, to leave those courses wherein it hath grieved him, and to cleave to him in all his Commandements. Look then, if entering into your own hearts, yee finde, that as much as hath beene amisse, by dispensing God's mercy and patience, yea, his goodness, giving you the Call of his Word, and Corrections; yee are grieved, that yee have beene so unkinde and undutifull to so kind and carefull a Father. If yee finde, that where it is to his glory, yee love to confesse your unfruitfulness, and to condemne your selves and doe with a true purpose of heart, strike a new Covenant with God, to forbeare your owne waies to walke more fruitfully before him, so farre as his Grace shall preserve you in the one, and strengthen then you in the other (for all our sufficiency is from him:) if yee finde these things in any measure, then rejoice; for God hath given you Repentance, to eternall life. But
If your hearts have neglected this exercise of a broken spirit, and if your conscience tell you, that there hath beene little or no griefe this way, then yee must be intreated, that whilest it is called to day, that God's grace doth still invite you, yee would not harden your hearts, but prepare to meete him. Wepe not for me, but for your sins, faith our Saviour, *Luke* 23, 28. And blessed are they that mourn in this kind: the Lord carrieth an hand-cher-thiefe to wipe away these teares; he is nigh to comfort these hearts: these April-dewes bring May-flowers; such as lowe in teares, shall reape in joy. Is it not better for us, to take the rodde into our owne hands, and beate our selves gently, than force the Lord to cha-ten us, who is a consuming fire? If the Lord see, that wee are but willing to cast downe our selves, and to deale with our owne soules, oce will cover our heads in the evill house, whereas his negligent Children
Children shall taste of his temporary displeasure. Delay not this: Our souls, in swerving from God, are like Bones out of joint; the longer they goe so, they prove more painful; if we take them betimes, they are set more easily. We will take Physicke, purge, or sweat, to prevent the growing of a disease upon our bodies: Shall we not be wise then for our souls? The vomit of the soule, is the griefe of Repentance: take it betimes, drive it not off, till the Lord be forced to visit. Now if God give you to desire, that your hearts were broken in his sight, but yet yee finde it will not be, partly for the hardness of your hearts, partly for other lets and impediments: I will helpe you a little at this lift; first, giving you rules for the out-wrestling of impediments; secondly, for the blowing up of our devotion in this exercise, which of all sacrifices is the most acceptable. Now for hinderances, yee must make
make account to meet with them, if ye purpose more seriously to call your selves to a more straight reckoning for your ways. Sometimes inward indisposition will grow upon you: Againe, the Divell will want of his will, but some sinne or other shall so close with your soules, which will, like a Thorne caught in the foote, hinder your intended journey. If yee escape these, he will further ply you with distractions from things, and persons, which are without you; This or that is necessarily to bee done; One or other is to speake with you. Furthermore, if yee looke seriously to this good way of Repentance, he will suggest, What needeth such ado? God is more mercifull, then to require such strait courses. Whom doe you see to vex themselves in such a manner? Yea, sometimes hee makes the entrance difficult, and comfortlesse, to see if hee can dismay us from proceeding. Finally, he will
Harpe much on this string: Wilt thou bid adieu to thy pleasures, and betake thy selfe to so painfull a course? And this is the Loth to depart he singeth to the soule that looketh towards God: first, to speake in generall to them; then in particular, to this last and main detention. Now, that we may safely passe these Rockes, we must first seriously consider the malice of the Devill against us, who by all possible means he can, opposeth the comming-acquainted with this exercise. While we are in our own wayes, the coast is cleare enough: but when God giveth us a good motion and purpose, the Devill doth watch it, as one should an infant, that he may kill it in the Cradle, yea, smother it in the Wombe, where it was conceived. Thus, Lord, when thou sendest by thy Spirit, a motion into our hearts for our soules health, he laboureth to make us quench the Spirit, and so to double our Condemnation. Now
Now then, seeing the malice of the Devill, ye must labour (secondly) to seeke your own weaknesse, that there is no strength in you to encounter with the enemy; and say thus to your selves: Lord, thou knowest it, I have no strength of my selfe: nay, I have that which presseth mee downe, which would make mee thinke, there is a Lyon in this way, and slip my necke out of this Collar, though there were no other with-standing me, nor ought without me, that should let me: How then should I be able to goe over so many things, without assistance? Then ye must, in the third place, looke up unto Christ by the eye of Faith (finding the Devils opposition, and your owne infirmities;) who giveth not onely the will to vs, but the deed, and worketh all our works for us. Speake to him, and say: Lord, thou canst help me; & as thou haft put this into my mind, and taught me to know this piece of thy holy
holy will, so I intreat thee to accomplish it in me: it is not I, but thy grace in me, which must effect all. As a Child who goeth with his Father, led in his hand, if he come to a Stile, or Bridge, he will cry to him, to take him and lift him over; so must we to our heavenly Father, cry to be taken up, above all these hindrances. This is an excellent remedy; when we behold Seas before us, mountains on each side, Armies of enemies behind us, all hindring our going forth of our selves; and in all, the Devils power: then to stand still, and looke for the salvation of the Lord. And here it is good to think on these quickning places of Scripture: Enter in at the strait Gate, *Matth.* 7.13. Nay, Strive to enter in; for many shall seek to enter in, and shall not be able, *Luke* 13.24. Seek ye first Gods Kingdome, and the righteousnesse thereof, *Matth.* 6.33. One thing is necessarie,*Luk.* 10.42. What if one could get the whole
whole world, if hee lose his owne Soule? \textit{Math. 16.26}. Narrow is the gate that leadeth unto life, and few there bee that find it, \textit{Mat. 7. 14}. Lastly, ye must think, how if ye appoint to bee with this or that man, but for some twenty Nobles matter, (in which (perhaps) yee gaine not a Pound clearly) nothing shall let you: if this or that of lesse moment be out of order, ye see it, and see it not; yee have a greater gaine in sight: if any would hold you backe, yee crave pardon, yee have pointed by such an houre, to meet such an one. Then yee must reason thus: Shall I be thus resolute in executing my purpose towards man, when I gaine some small matter, and shall I let any thing hinder me, when I am to go to God about the greatest merchandize of my soules health? Is not this to be penny wise, & pound foolish? This in generall. Now in particular. That ye may then out-grow the feare of parting with pleazure, and conceit

P 3
of so much heavines in this course of repentance; ye must first know, that this is a jugling of Satan, whereby he holds men on in the ways of sin to death. He will shew us nothing but delight in evil courses, hiding all the after bitterness of them, which should bring them out of request with us: so in good ways tending to life, he will tell us of nothing but pain, concealing all the comfort of them, that so he may keep us from entring them to salvation. Secondly, we are worse afraid then hurt. For, like as the rising out of the soft bed, seemeth beforehand to the sluggard exceeding tedious, but when he is once up, doth not dare him at all: So is the awaking from the sleep of sin, and slumbering in the relics of lust, which still have dwelling even in the best of us. Who ever repented him of repentant griefe? Nay, who rejoiceth not in God who giveth it, finding it more sweet to his soule, and more pleasant,
then the pleasure of sinne, which soon vanisheth, leaving a sting behin
hind it? Thirdly, if we try in a repentant course to leave the pleasures of sins in which we have lived, they will shortly have no such power over us, as to hold us; thus hard: For Chrysostom doth fitly liken the to little Puppies, which while we play with the, will do nothing but leap about us, but if we cudgell them a little, have no joy to come near us. Fourthly, we must not let passions blind our judgments; but consider penitent sorrow, with the end of it, and impenitent delights with the issue of the. What is bitterer then medicine? Yet health, to which it bringeth us, doth make it lovely. What sweeter to our taste, the many things we will not touch, because we find they love not us, though we love them, we are afterward the worse for the. In this respect therefore, were the medicine of repentance grievous to take, yet in regard of the everlasting health
Gods wayes not grievous.

to which it restoreth us, we should likewise men, take the lower with the sweete; yea, choose it rather, then to feed sweently on such meats as please the Palate only while they are tasted, but cause at length vomits more bitter than death. Fifthly, say we should lose our delights, (though we shal part with nothing but stollen waters) is it not better, as Christ saith, we should want an eye here, and go to heaven, then having it, to be cast into hell fire? Mat. 18.9.

To conclude, this objection is a slander raised upon Gods wayes, which are full of prosperity and pleasure; and is forcible with us, partly, through sloth, which maketh us unwilling to these works (and what is not irksome to a mind undisposed?) partly, from ignorant sensuality, which counteth nothing liberty, but licence, nothing sweet, but what is taken in huggermugger, without Gods allowance: like as some gallants,
which think no Venison so sweet
as that which is stolen. This in par-
ticular to the principal impediment.

Now for the furthering your de-
vo tion in this exercise, yee must
know, that there is an art blowing
up of every grace of the spirit, & of
this with the rest. First therefore,
yee must enter into your owne
hearts, considering your owne
ways. We will keepe reckoning
what we runne on the score with
men, but rare who thinke how
deeply they are in Gods Bookes:
such ill husbands are wee for our
Soules. Now we must heere mark
warily, whether we have not lost
some graces we have had (I meane
have them not so powerfully as we
have felt them) whether we doe
not give place to sloth, doing
Gods service coldly and slighty;
whether we have not forgotten
our covenant made with God in
Baptisme, to wit, of dying to our
own thoughts, words & deeds dai-
ly; and laboring in our whol course

that
We must call to minde our greatest that not now we live, but Christ in us (as Paul speaketh) his spirit teaching us to do every thing as before him, and in conscience of his will, to his glory. Here also ye must call to minde the most grievous sinnes which ye at any time have provoked God with. We must not bid adieu to the remembrance of our sinnes past and pardoned, but must ever beare them in memory so farre forth as will help us to the working of godly sorrow, holy bashfulness & lowliness of mind; so far as may be a spurre to more fruitfull obedience for the time to come, Deu. Yea this remembring of the sinne past in particular, by which we have chiefly offended God, and mourning for it, & judging ourselves in the remembrance of it, is the evidence of true effectual repentance: So Israel acknowledged their desiring a King: So David his adultery and murther: So Paul his persecuting. He who is truly humbled in the fight of
one capital sin, repenteth of all.
Even as a capital disease being taken away, which draweth on many another by consent, the rest are at once removed also. Again, we must call to minde our daily swervings and unfruitfulness. This is, the opening and the looking on our wounds, the neglect whereof is lewd carelessness, mortally dangerous. It is no news, nor yet disliked when you see a soildier shot or wounded: but to see him go with it, never regard it, never dress it, is condemned as desperate folly: So for us fighting in this world, no newes, if we come by knocks and maimes; but to let them go, and ranckle, & fester in us, is forlorn negligence. Now then, if thus setting the matter before you, ye find not your hearts pricked with it, then you must (as the Prophet speaks) take words to your selves, and trouble your own soules, laying, thus; Shall I think of my sins against God, and not grieve for them?
them? If I have overshot my selfe, so that men may have a saying to me, that doth cut me to the heart, and I am ashamed. If somewhat do but crosse my corruptnature, I have griefe at will, and shall I not now grieve for offending my good God? If I had broken day, & not kept touch with man, I could not look him in the face; and shall it not go neer with me, that I have kept my Covenant no better with God? If my servant have loytere-red his day away, and not done my work, he blushteth, and is afraid to come before me; and shall I not change my countenance, & be moved, that I have bin so unprofitable in the workes of God? By this meanes; as men being in swoonze, when they are chafed, doe come againe: so shall our soules, while we thus bestirre them, finde some warmth returning to them. This is a fruit, and furtherance of the grace of Repentance; whereas the want of these Soliloquies, is re-
Go to Christ for a relenting heart.

prooved as a token of an impenitent heart, *Hos. 7:2*. But if yet the heart will not relent, you must in the third place (seeing your barrenness and inability) turne you to Christ, speaking in this wise: Were it to grieve at earthly occasions, or that my self were displeased, were my affections would come to me before I sent for them: but for godly sorrow, none of it grows in our gardens; our foolish hearts love not holy mourning; our hard hearts will not relent to think how we displease thee. We therefore knowing, that there is no strength in ourselves, to any thing that is good, looke unto theee: thou art the Christ and Lord, thou givest Repentance to thine Israel, and forgivenes of sinnes: thou L O R D doest circumcisse the heart, thou hammerest and breakest the stone by thy Spirit, making it fleshly and tender: L O R D doe thou turne us, and we shall be turned, *Lament. 5:21*. Thus while ye turn your
your eyes to Jesus the quickening spirit, he will be present to quicken this grace in you. But what if yet your hearts should not so kindly melt within you, as ye desire, yet all is safe: for this is the smoke of repentance which Christ will not leave till it blaze forth; he will not put out the smoking week. This desire and labouring after it, is happiness itself: for blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness: Yea using this course to consider of your wants to chide (after some sort) your own souls, and to look after Christ the giver of repentance; the stone of your hearts (the hardnes) will come away by little and little. Yea, and when in bodily wounds the most approved plaister must be laid on often; ye must not think that these spirituall evils, so long growing on us, should be gone on a sudden. I do beseech you therefore, as ever ye will taste the comforts of God; as ye will finde ease in the
evill houre, when nothing but God can refresh you; yea, as ye love to escape much worldly sorrow, which tendeth unto death; so acquaint your selves betimes with this exercise of a broken heart. Blessed are they which (now) mourn, for they shall be comforted. And we know much more earthly sorrow then we should, because we will not trouble our own soules a little, blowing up that godly sorrow which is required at our hands.

Now followeth another thing which I propounded, viz. to helpe you forward in new obedience, in the faithfull keeping of the Covenant. The summe of the Covenant betweene God and us, is this; God in Christ faith, he will take us for his people: we promise him, that we will have him for our God. This therefore doth comprize all our dutie to God, that we set him up in our hearts as God. Which thing
How to have God our God.

thing we do, first, when we grow up to know him in all things. Secondly, when we make him our trust. Thirdly, when we love him above all things. Fourthly, when we fear him. Fifthly, when we rejoice in him. Sixthly, when our hearts are thankfully affected to him, making him their song and praise. This is to have him for our God; when we know nothing, trust in nothing, love, fear, rejoice in nothing in comparison of him: when our hearts are thankful above all to him. To speak a little to the several.

We cannot have God our God, till we come to know him in Christ. Ignorance doth estrange us from God, & knowledge doth acquaint us with him. This Paul praiseth for in the behalf of his Colossians, that they may be filled with the knowledge of God, the spirits of their minds being opened to look toward him. Even as our image in the glasse doth look to ward
ward us, from whom it is reflected: To God his Image in us doth make the eyes of our minds view him, the author of it in us. And as the eye becommeth one with that which it seeth, and is after a sort in that light it beholdeth: so are we by the vision of God, which is begun in us, one with him, and in him. Now this knowledge considereth God three ways; either simply apart from all other respects, and thus it containeth the Spiritual essence, in respect of his properties, into which this selfsame nature is distinguished; the Father, Sonne, and Holy Ghost, all of them having the same spiritual essence: as if I, and you with some third man, might be supposed to have all one and the self same soule and body, being distinct persons. Or else it considereth God, as made manifest in our nature: for Jesus the Sonne having the same nature with the Father, hath taken such a soule and body, as we have
Know God in Jesus Christ.

have (in onely excepted) to the fellowship of his person; and that is become Emmanuel, God with us, or God manifest in our nature. which humane nature, God the Son suffered death for us; in which likewise he manifesteth his divine power, by raising it up, and glorifying it in heaven. So that he that was dead in his humane nature, is now alive in it for ever, having swallowed up death in victory. Lastly, it considereth God, manifested in Christ, as he is become our God by covenant, in regard of such things as his faithful mercy doth work for us. He in Christ is our justifier, our sanctifier; who helpeth us in conquering remnents of our nature's corruption; our Redeemer, who delivereth us from all our troubles; the God that careth for us, veth us every good gift, blesseth us in our estates, feedeth us, giveth us, and all his beloved, sleepe, fendeth us from all evil, keep
We are naturally blinđe.

by his power unto salvation, is the beginner & ender of all good graces in us. But how short are we in this point? We are like Infants, in a manner, new-born: they are kept by the loving Parents from fire and water, they are fed, aids to sleep, made ready and unready, and shifted in their scapes; but they know not who doth all his for them: so doth our heaven-y Father by us in Christ; but (he knoweth) little understanding have we of him: For though God be Light it selfe, a Spirit which brightly seeth all things in heaven and earth, to whose pure brightness, the Sunne is darkness; yet the weakness of our sight is such, that we cannot looke against it: as the Bat and the Owle cannot endure to see the bright Beames of the Sunne in the Firmament.

Ye must therefore take notice of your spiritual Blindness, and come unto him who selleth the Eye-salve, which hath the Spirit of
Go to God for eye-salve.

of Illumination, who openeth the Eyes of the blind; cry to him for mercy. If your eyes were much bloud-shot (your eyes wherewith ye see but one another, Creatures like your selves) yee would seek out for helpe for them, and wash them with strong smarrting Waters, but yee would restore them.

And will yee not seeke to your God in Christ, to restore the sight of your spirits, wherewith ye may see him, and the things of your peace within the veile, even in the Heavens? Nay, ye must be ashamed, that yee take no more knowledge of your God in the whole day. If our children, when we are beside them, should through rudeness and carelesnes not once cast a look at us, as acknowledging our presence; would we take it at their hands? Might not everyone say, These were better fed than taught which are thus gracelesse? Let us apply it to our selves, who serve our God and Father little better. Now
We must trust in God.

Now that we may set upon this life with the better hope, let us remember that God hath promised it unto us; this is his Covenant, we shall know him, from the greatest to the least of us. But lest grow too tedious, I come to the second.

We must trust in God, having our hopes on his mercy and truth towards us; and these two be together. Men sometimes, the more we know them, the lesser we will them, and that deservedly: but Psalme 9, 10. Such as know God, shall trust in him.

Who so reposeth all his confidence in God, hee taketh him, in doing, for his God. As the scripture faith in this respect, the covetous man is an Idolater; hee taketh his money for his God, because he putteth his trust in uncertain riches: his wealth is a strong tower in his conceit, and he trusteth in the Creature, which draweth his heart from God, faith the Prv-
We trust not in God as we

Prophet, Jer. 17.5. Teaching us, that then our hearts are united to God, when the assurance of them is set on him. Now, though we should live by the faith of the Son of God, trusting on him for the giving and maintaining of all our good, both temporal & eternal; leaning on him for all defence, & deliverance from evils spiritual, yea, and corporal; casting all our care on him; having no confidence in the flesh, but rejoicing in Christ Jesus, though this be our duty, yet we are exceeding weak, and full of unbelief. This will appear, by our want of fear at the threatenings of God's Word, which maketh us loosely also to looke after his promises. Did we believe such threatenings, If ye live after the flesh, ye shall die? we would tremble, where we favour ourselves in our own ways: the devils believe, and tremble. And so, trusting civilly in any man's word or bond, we do seek them carefully, and are
ought; hence unbeliefe.

...re glad when we have gotten them; and, as we say, we write upon them, that we shall have so much money at such a day, upon a substantiall mans word, or bond, given us. But God, who promieth all good things in this life, as well as in the life to come, his Seales we seek not after; which is a signe of our great unbeliefe in them. Secondly; by resting our hearts in outward things, and by being disquieted when we want them; this also is a signe, that our hearts are unbelieving.

While we have means, or good likelihood of this, or that, we are well; let these faile, we are troubled: Which sheweth, that we rest not upon the Word of God, which is as sure in the want of all things, as in abundance; but that we leane on such things as we see, and have in hand. Suppose a man had Crutches under his armes, but leaneth not at all on the as he goeth, take them away, and he wal-
keth as before: So, did wee not trust, and lean on the things seen, but on God, who is not seen, looking on him by the eye of faith, we should goe as upright, when all things to fcence feme contrary to that we beleeve, as when our fee ling is fed abundantly. Thirdly, did wee rest in God and trust in him, who is all in all; we would seek to him for his blessings, more then for the meanes, which by his bleffing effect this or that; whereas we labour not to make him sure to us, but to get the means, and then we think all is wel with us. Now then when yee finde your unbeleefe, yee must make it odious unto your selves by fuch like considerations; Shall I fearch after the word of man sometimes, to secure me but of fome twenty shillings matter? and shal I not fearch after the precious promises of my God? Shal I trust to a man promising this or that? and shall I not trust my God, who is truth it felfe, and cannot lye? Will not fuch
How we must love God.

Such a substantial man think much if I take not his bare word? And shall not I take my Lords Word, and Seale, and Oath? He hath sworne to blesse us, with all his blessings in Christ: shall we not beleive him, unless he leave us a pawne also? Thus then, when yee feele your unbeleevings hearts to trouble you, ye must look to Christ, the authour and finisher of your faith. Speak to him thus: Thou hast begun, and thou must finish: I beleeeve; help my unbeliefe, and encrease my faith.

The third point is, We must love him. Love (we know) makes a man and woman, One; and the same doth couple us to God. Here we must labour to say from our hearts; Lord, what have we in heaven, but thee? or in the earth, in comparison of thee? Now, though we doe love him, yet our affection is but weak; and above all things, we had need to mend in this behalfe. Trie your love, and then
then judge of it. Those ye love, doe ye not love to be present with them, as ye two one with another? If one of you be out of Towne, doe ye not thinke long till ye meet againe? Are not we grieved to heare them wronged by word or deed, whom we esteeme dearely of? Doth it not cut us, if we our selves do them any harme? Are we not glad of a Letter (in absence) from those we love? Now then examine your selves: Do ye not finde little joy, in comming privately or publikely into Gods house, or presence? Nay, we are like children, who can play abroad all the day long, and never lock in, to their Parents. When do our hearts long to be dissolved, and to be with Christ? Though God, through sundry troubles, doth even smoake us out of this World, yet we will not come away, in our affections. When we heare Gods Name blasphemed, and see all wickednest committed, doe our eyes gush.
be ashamed of the want of it.

gush out with tears? Or do we not, when our selves offend him daily, passe it over, taking too light penance of our selves? Doe we, with David, delight in his Statutes more than in all wealth? His Word is his Letter to us. By such like considerations, discerning your want of love to God, yee must shame your selves. If a woman should be dead in the nest, when her husband were before her, but should be affectionate to every stranger; If she should not care how long she were absent from him, but think her selfe best, while they were asunder; If she cared little how her loving husband were offended, casting that at her heeles, which he takes to heart; were not this shameles behaviour in her? And shall not we be ashamed to shew no more love to thee, to whom our soules are married in Christ? Then ye must goe and confesse that your hearts are full of Harlotry, and false love. Ye can
Concerning love to earthly

love your selves, ye have affection enough to the things of this world; to the gifts of God, and those the meanest, more than to the givers: as Harlots to Rings, Gold, Bracelets, more than to the Senders. Therefore, beseech him to purge your hearts of this, and to fill them with the love of himselfe: for this is the promise; I will circumcise your hearts, and make you love me with all your hearts. Before we passe from this Head, a Question may be moved, common to all these affections; namely, What we may judge of our selves, seeing our hearts more shine in love, fear, and joy at worldly things, than about God, and the great benefits given us in Christ?

The answer is: First, in many earthly things we have a double cause working in our affections; as in loving the Wife of ones youth, and in bewailing the death of ones Parent: and whereas the motion of our affections, in things supernaturall
things, above our love to God.

naturally, is purely from Grace, Nature setting no hand to this business. Secondly, affection is not to be measured by the indeliberate passing motion of it, but according to the settled habit from the judgment and estimation which the mind maketh of this or that object. A man laughs at a toy: he is not presently said to joy in that trifle more than in all other things, because the act of his joy is more lively here than in greater matters. A man's affections more toire about a stranger, in entreating him, than to his Wife, for the time, whom he yet loveth more deare. Thirdly, affections if they be comparatively considered in us, are, though lesse in quantity, yet greater in vartue: as Corne, when the Weed (as Carloe) is higher and greater, yet this is stronger, because in time it overgrows, and killeth the Weed, which farre exceedeth it: So this love, though little, in comparison of selfe-love, love to the
the creature (the same being in the other affections) yet in time it shall over-grow and kill this weed. The love of the Spirit is stronger than the love of the world: If therefore ye ask, What one should thinke, that findeth his affections thus? I answer, If he find them stronger, there are two causes to one; where Nature and Grace worke jointly, he must not wonder at this matter. Againe, though we feele their working more stirring sometimes to things earthly, yet out of judgement and settled course, we that are the Lords, doe most affect him. Thirdly, we know that our affections towards God, though but as a grain of Mustard-seed, shal out-grow all this choak-weed of inordinacy, which we feel in this behalfe. In the mean while, the feeling of this distemper, must make us still seek the rectifying of it, and the healing of the lamentable vanity, to which the affection is subject, by reason of sinne.
The fourth thing, is the feare of God. Sanctifie the Lord in your hearts, make him your feare. Feare to offend him, who when the body is killed, can cast the soul into hell fire. We should reverence his excellent Majesty, & dread to offend him, because he hath been gracious unto us, and hath power to do with us whatsoever he pleaseth. Were there any from whom we had house and stocke, so that he could turn us out of all at his pleasure; would we not walk very circumspectly, fearing to doe that which might alienate his favour? Againe, if the Majestie of a mortall man doth affect us (as of the King) with reverence, how much more should we be affected with the most glorious Majesty of the most high God? Now ye must know, your hearts are much void of this. Also the thing it selfe speakest: Do ye not feele (when in prayer ye are to speake with God) that there is a reverence in your hearts.
beseeching so high a Majestie? Do ye not seeele a want of dread at his Judgements, which so long have been upon us, and still hover about us? And what awe is in us, making us fearfull by sinne to displease him? Alas! Presumption, security, and hardnesse of heart, these Weeds grow so high, that we can scarce discern the Fruit above-named. Now then ye must work this want upon your hearts, as the former, saying; If I were in the presence of some great personage, and should carry my selfe rudely, without respect, would I not blush? And shall I not be ashamed, that I have no more reverence when I come before thee, O thou God of glory? So, for want of dread: Shall the Beasts tremble, when the Lyon roareth? yea, shall the Devils tremble to thinke on thy Judgements; and shall I be senselesse; and no whit mooved? So, for want of awe, in regard of Gods Lawes: Shall I dare as well
up to fear God.

to take a Bear by the tooth, as to break the Kings Law, especially where he threatneth Limbe, Life, or Libertie: And shall I not be afraid to trespass against thy Statutes; the breach of which, is punishable with eternall death? Is there none but thee, whom we may make bold with? Shall I be so foolish, as to fear sickness, povertie, and mens displeasures: And shall I not be afraid to break thy Commandements, if men note me to hit me in the teeth with preciseness? Shall I not be afraid to provoke by sinne thy wrath, who art a consuming fire? What is this, but with little children, to be scarred with a Bug-beare, harmless; and to be dreadless of fire, and water? Lastly, we must looke to God in conscience, how this affection is perverted in you; confessing to him, that ye can feare the faces of men, and things that are, or seem hurtfull to your selves; ye can demean your selves rever-
We must rejoice in the Lord, rentedly toward such as are in re-
quest among men; but toward him, y: find great want. Pray ye there-
fore to him, to put it into your hearts: he hath covenanted, to put
his feare into your hearts, so that ye shall not depart from him.

The fifth thing is, to rejoice in God, and to have him in your
hearts; for God bindeth you to rejoice in him: Rejoyce in the
Lord alwayes; againe, I say, re-
joyce. Delight thy selfe in the
Lord, and he shall give thee thy
hearts desire. Let not the rich man
rejoyce in wealth, the strong man
in strength, the wise man in wise-
dome, but that he knoweth me,
faith the Lord. For what we make
our chiefe joy, that is our God: for
the heart refleth principally in that
with which it is most delighted.
Now what is more equal, that we
should solace ourselves in him
with joy unspeakeable and glorious,
who hath delivered us from death,
and sinne, and Satan? (who, as
Gods
but doe not as we ought.

Gods executioner, hath power on sinne and death) In him,who is a Light and a Shield; that is a Fountain of all good, and defender of us from all evill; able to maintain all the good, both spirituall and corporall, which we have, and give us whatsoever is wanting. But if we marke our hearts, our joy is much depraved, (so that Salomon faith not without caufe, that our laughter is become madnesse:) for our hearts are not cheery this way. Tell them of the precious benefits which are given in Christ; Pardon of sinne; Peace (the beginning of everlasting life) through the work of grace; Hope, through Christ, of the heavenly Kingdom; why? they can heare all this, and be so farre from leaping within us, that we can hardly discerne them to moove. Nay, if we marke them the better, we shall see, that when we would hold them to the remembrance of such things; untill they have broken loose from us, they
they are not in their kind, and cannot be lightsome: as if God were the damper of our mirth, and not the matter of our exulting, and gladness.

Now when ye cannot observe any rejoicing in the Lord, ye must shame your selves, by laying to your hearts the case in other matters. If I see some Toy, or hear some jest, I cannot contain my selfe: If I hear some good newes, or meet with some prosperous success in my worldly affaires, I cannot be pleasant enough: If I be passing my time away with my friends; at their courteous invite-ments, or if I be at my sports, it goeth on merrily; deadness and uncomfortablenesse, I feel them not for the time. I shall have laughter enough at some merry conceit, or a Feather, till I tickle againe; and shall I not rejoice at the Gospel of God, or good newes from Heaven, touching the salvation of my soule? Again, shall I be cheery, and
to rejoice in the Lord.

and laugh with my friends; and shall I be all mortal, when I draw near my God? Shall I be glad of acquaintance with man, and not be glad that I know God in Christ, who is Life everlasting? Shall the wicked rejoice, in serving Sinne, and Satan; and shall I be without birth, in serving my God? Our rejoicing is earthly, little joy of the Holy Ghost dwelleth in us. We are like such as are sick of light Frenzies; they will laugh at their shadowes, we at our fancies; they see not into any point of moment, we distaste that which favoreth of Righteousnesse, and right reason. As therefore against the former, so against this also, we must fight the good fight of Faith; looking to him that hath said, he will make our hearts glad in his house; who hath promised to send his Spirit unto us, that our joy may be full; praying him, that we may feel this Fruit of his Kingdome take place in us; that he would rectifie
rectifie this affection in us, making us to take comfort in that which is matter of true rejoicing.

Sixtly, Now for praising God, and thankfulnesse unto him, (for this is the last thing I propounded) we have this commandement; In all things give thanks, yea, in evils: shall we receive good things from the Lord, and not evils? The Lord hath given, & the Lord hath taken away, blessed be the Name of the Lord. For howsoever it be, yet God is good, even when he punisheath; and no wonder, Is it not so in bodily things? Bitter Medicines are as good, in due season, as the delightfulest dainties. And are not our inward and outward crosses, by God's grace, made wholesome Physicke, to purge out our corruptions, and to make us partakers of the quiet fruit of Righteousnesse, and true Holiness? Yea, our hearts should be so thankfully affected, that (like fire) they should breake forth, and
and inflame others. Wherein we have holy David for an example: Psal. 103. he begins; My soule, and all within me, praise his holy Name: In the next Psalme, the last verse, he saith; Praise ye the Lord. First, he stirres up himselfe, and then provokes others to praise the Lord. As the Cocke, that first clapping his wings about his owne body, rowzeth up himselfe, and after (crowing) awakeneth others. Otherwise, common tearmes of thankesfulnesse, without affection, are as Court-holy-water, (as we say) which our God, that looketh at the heart and reines, doth not respect: these are good words, that will pay no debt with him.

And truely, there is good reason for this. For whether ye looke at benefits past, eaten Bread must not be forgotten, thankes must still be greene: And doth not your particular deliverance (when many fall on each hand of you) binde you, daily to bee thankesfull?
Or whether ye looke at the things ye enjoy; ye know your temporall blessings; as tolerable health, good name and reputation, freedom from suit and service, ability rather to be helpfull than chargeable, your domesticall peace, your libertie, without feare of restraint; all of them in their places, no small matters. If ye consider spiritual blessings; that which ye have downe in hand, is as great a work of his mercy, as the glorious estate ye looke for hereafter. Is not the Lords worke more admirable, in the first making and quickening the Infant in the Wombe, than in feeding it there, bringing it forth and nursing it up to full stature? So, his begetting us again, who were dead in sinne (though yet in the Wombe of our Mother, the Church) to be alive in Christ Jesus, when we are new-borne babes in him, is more then the bringing of us to perfect Manhood. And though it seeme strange, yet it is
blessings, motives to praise God.

truly in this respect, because we like Infants; who live, but yet now not that they live: so, we living in small measure the Spirit, which teacheth us to know the things bestowed upon us, know not how great that grace is, which hath been already shewed us. Is a small thing, when we were dead in ignorance, and in lust of ignorance, to be quickned with life of God, in knowledge, righteousnesse, & holinesse? When we were enemies, to be made ends, yea, sons and daughters? The Apostle doubteth not to rea-n from this, to everlasting life, as the lesser, Rom. 5. 10. God, when we were enemies, hath reconciled by his death; how much more all he save us, with perfect salvation of soule and body, by his life? that is, by putting forth the power of his Spirit. Now he liveth, to die no more.

These then are great things, as quitting you from sinne, and death;
death; for Christ, your Surety, sake, he sending his Spirit into your hearts, and giving you part in the first Resurrection. Besides these, ye must remember, with adversities he hath holpen you in, how he hath eased the yoke of your corruptions, which hath had more power in you, than now they have. Yea, what evil he hath put by you. Have ye not been tempted in this or that kind? It is, because God in mercy would not lead you into temptation. Yea, this is, in some sort, more to be acknowledged than victory, when ye were tempted: for not to be tempted, is more immediate from God, and lesse in man power, than to prevail against temptations. For nothing doth overcome us, without our will; but without our will, God doth lead us into tryall; for he knoweth, we would taste little of these, if it were in our power to be our owne captains. Ye must be as thankful for the
Of times which God hath not,
ye know, as for those he hath
doned in you, having commit-
d them.
Whether doe ye thinke, ye are
und to praise God more, if hee
shoore you, when sickeness hath
m upon you; or keepe you so,
at you feele no Disease? Now,
ye consider what things God
th prepared for you, they are
as eie never saw, nor ever fully
red into the heart of man.
mpare the estate of Prince Hen-
in his Queen Mothers wombe,
th his condition, at full age, in
the glory of his Fathers Court,
er is a broad difference, and it
ay fitly resemble the difference
our present and future estate:
re are borne Sonnes and Daugh-
rs of God, heires apparent to the
ngdome of Heaven; but while
Church doth here travel of us,
re are pent up in dark Cloysters,
d annoyed with much stenchof
both in our selves and others:
but
but hereafter our estate shall be together lightsome, happy, & glorious: so that we may well say, God, How great is the goodness that thou hast laid up for them that fear thee? How great thing doest thou worke for the sonnes of men, for such as hope in thee? See then, how for things past, present, and those also which he hath in store for us, we are bound to thankfull. Now, if ye aske what it is, wherein our unthankfulness standeth? I answer: first, in hearty acknowledgement of Gods goodness to us in all things, with conscience of our owne unworthinesse, as not worthy of the least all his mercies. Compare Genesis 10. and 33. 5. with 1. Chron. 14. Secondly, we must tell Gods goodness, that we may glorifie him before others. Come I will tell you, faith David, what the Lord hath done for my soul. So, Moses would tell his father in law what God had done for them.
thirdly, it doth make us cast about, what we may return unto God, by way of thankfulnesse: What shall I give unto the Lord, for all his benefits unto me? Last, it will make us accuse our selves, we be backward in duty. Thus see, when we receive any special kindnesse from our friends; first, our inward affections do acknowledge and entertaine it glad; secondly, we tell what any one hath done for us; thirdly, we will inke how we may requite him, at least, testifie our thankfulnesse towards him; fourthly, we to our selves (if we go on, and no token of good will be returned) as much too blame, that we should forget so great a courtesie, as was owed to us.

Now then, that ye have heard that it is to be thankful, and what good reason we have to enforce his duty upon us, we must lay our lives to this rule; & we shall find, that we come as short herein, as in the
wee horribly unthankfull. What bleffings do we receive, not our casting a looke unto the giver, when we are kept in night and our houses from fire, breaking into; when we are kept in our goings out and commings in. When fed: Do we hearty knowledge God in all thefe? I he that watcheth, or else in va; he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Helen-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening this hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va: they keepeth the Cittie. It is he that wardeth about us all day, keeping us in our wayes: Houe-keeper, giveth us our da: he that wardeth about us all day, opening his hand and like a gro: giveth sleep to his beloved: I roket us asleep, and draweth us about vs; giveth sleepe to his beloved: I he that watcheth, or else in va;
Corrupt examples of worldly men; the spirituall wickednesses which light against us; when ye go in spirituall peace from morning until night, which alone is a gift passing understanding: Doe ye acknowledge God, with affection toward him, in all these? It is hee that shiftest us out of the shape of our naturall corruption, washing us in the blood of his Christ; from the th of our finnes; he forgiveth us very day our trespasses: It is his light, in which, as in a Tower, we are kept safe, against all the enemies of our salvation: He is the God of Peace, the Prince of Peace Christ, who killeth the accussing, and subdueth the rage and urpation of sinne in us. We are such in fault, who have received good things at God's hands; & renuyed evill, & scarce taken notice of any his kindnesses towards us, God doth carry us on the tender mes of his mercy; but ( alas ) little doe we understand of him.
In benefits often received, our spirits doe not once looke up to him, but as Swine take the Maste, so we our blessings: Or if we do a thing by way of thankfulness, how flubberingly do we turne over, our affectiones being bent another way, rather than to the full praying of our God? We ser him, as little children serve us; when they be come in to us, from their play, and having gotten something of us that they want, awe they goe, without reverence or respect of us: but if they know will have dutie, then they doe, but in such a fashion, that we see their hearts are on their Gar abroad, more than on their dut.

So, for speaking what our God hath done for us (thankfulness will not smother a benefit recev'd) when do we tell him, without delight of his kindnesse? Why doe we beat our braines, not suffering the temples of our head take any rest, till we have given e
God, some argument of our thankfulness? Alas! we use our God, as if it greatly mattered not how he were dealt with. Now then, take words to your selves, condemning from your hearts this grievous sinne. Say, if a man do bid me to Supper once in a Quarter, I thanke him then; when I meet him next after, I thank him againe for my last being with him; I tell him, what kind welcome, what good cheere he made me: then I invite him sometime againe, and checke my selfe, if I forget it. But if some greater matter be bestowed upon us, how exceeding kindly do we take it? how do we love to tell of it: how do we yeeld our selves up to them that gave it, professing our selves to be at their command, to the uttermost of our abilitie? Shall I thanke him who giveth me a Supper in love, tell of his loving entertainment, & be ashamed if I make no neighbourly requitall? & that I not be affectionately thank-full
full to my God, who giveth me all my dayly Bread? yea, who feedeth my soule with Himselfe, in Iesus Christ, (here is my body, & bloud) that I may live for ever? Shall I not tell of the fined Wines, those fat things, even of my God, broken in his body & soule with sorrowes, shedding his most precious bloud, wherewith my most unworthie soule hath beene fed, and feasteth? Shall I, for so small a kindnesse, thank a man a thousand times, and tell him, I am his to be commanded; and shall I not surrender my selfe to my God, who hath payed my debt and purchased me a new Stocke, even the hope of eternall life, with his precious bloud? Shall I blush at small unthankfulness toward man, and not be ashamed of great want this way, toward God? What? shall I be worse to my God, than an Oxe or an Asse to his owner? If I should shew one exceeding great love, and he should not at all regard me, or returne me but some
How to attaine a thankesfull heart.

Some common countenance; could I endure it? Thus then turne your selves unto God, and say; I am become worse unto thee, than the Whelpes that seede under my Table, are unto me: they will, in their kinde, faire upon me lovingly; and if any smite me they will presently flye at him. But my hard heart hath no power to be thankfull unto thee, and to praye thee: My zeale is not moved, when thou art blasphemed; I can suffer thy reproach with dry eyes, and untroubled spirit. Oh, thou who requirest of me in all things to give thee thankes; and hast promised to write thy Commandements in my heart, put into my heart a Law of thankfulness. O thou quickening Spirit, quicken my soule this way. Now finallie, for attaining an thankfull heart, ye must labour for these three things: First, ye must quicken in your selves the conscience of your own unworthines; for we cannot praise God to any purpose,
further then we see our selves lesse than the least of all his mercies. Even as hunger is good lawce, making bitter things sweet; so this poverty of spirit, and conscience of our owne unworthinesse, doth make every benefit amiable tasted. Secondly, ye must labour to work upon your selves a sense of the worth of those things ye enjoy; in which, we greatly faile: which maketh us usually, that we never know the price and worth of our good blessings, until we are deprived of them. And this neglect doth breed a double mischiefe; it makes us enjoy things unthankfully, yea, uncomfortably; (for that which through plenty seemeth no dainty cannot be so delightfull unto us.) And when they are taken away, then we come to Had-I-wist; and do so much more penance; by how much we have bin more careless. In a word, so much as I esteeme of a gift bestowed, so farre forth am I thankful: Not the having of things but
but the having of them in estimation, breeds thanksgiving. Thirdly, ye must labour to see God's goodness to you in all things: the grace of the giver, not the gift itself, so much engendreth thankfulness; the gift is the Shell, and this is the Meat, which tasted in the soul, is sweeter than life, and maketh us break out into praises. Labour for thankful hearts; God asketh nothing else but this, as a Rent for all his blessings bestowed upon us: I will deliver thee, and thou shalt praise my Name. We will not let go Leases to men, for not paying of Rent: neither let us give God cause to enter and strain upon us, & all that we have, for not magnifying and praising him. Thus if God helpe you to stirre up your hearts, (for our affections, in going this way, are like dull Asles, which go no longer than they are beaten;) if, I say, he give you grace to stir up your hearts to repentance, & to surrender your souls to him,
by eying him, trusting on him, loving him, rejoicing in him, so making him your fear, praying him by spirit, word, and worke; then hapie shall ye be: If new plagues breake forth, ye shall have your comfort in the hottest. And if ye labour to see how farre your hearts are out of frame, in regard of knowledge, trust, love, seare, joy, thankfulnesse, and in regard of impenitent hardnes and impudencie which is in them, (for they cannot blush for that which God knoweth by them, though our cares will tingle and glow on our heads, if any man know ought reproachfull by us;) if ye labour to finde this out, and then in the sight of your misery look to Gods promise, who hath covenanted to give you a new heart, a tender heart, in which his Commandments shalbe written by the finger of his spirit; then ye shall see that this course will let you be neither idle nor unprofitable; yea, it shall bring you to grow unto perfection.
For as the young body, which from wholesome emptinesse, hath fresh appetite to new sustenance, taketh augmentation more and more; so the soule, which from observing the heartlesnesse of it selfe, waxeth dayly poore in its owne eyes, hungring and thirsting after righteousnes, receiveth dayly spiritual encrease from God. Wise men will take the sower with the sweete, and nothing in the World is gotten, without pains-taking. Therefore, if it seeme to have any bitterness, or to require labour, ye must not be dismayed. I promise you, it is but (some little) brackish in the top; the deeper ye goe, ye shall finde it the sweeter. Make a vertue of necessitie. If ye will enter into life, this one thing is necessarie, Luke 10.42. But there is none that awaketh himselfe, to lay hold on God. The Lord give you understanding in all things.
Another Letter, written by Master Paul Bayne.

My Christian friend, if I had sooner knowne of your heaviness, I would before this have written unto you: For the more arguments we have of love, borne us by God's children, the more testimonies we have of his favour towards us. It pleased God, in December last, to change his hand toward you, and to touch you in your wife, whom now he hath againe visitred, and I hope to both your comforts. Truely our God (through Jesus Christ) is so mercifull, that all things are sanctified by him unto our good: all afflictions, though for the present not joyous, yet they bring us afterward the quiet fruit of righteousness. These evils which here ever and anon are present with us, they are fitly compared to wayward and touchy-guests: which, while they stay, watch every officer; but when they
they depart, they pay freely. So it is with these: they oftentimes disquiet the frame of the whole soul; but when they go away, they leave increase of grace, of faith, of patience, of experience; that the soul faith. Well, it is good I knew these things. But the present working of sorrows seemeth often far otherwise: for in stead of increasing in faith, our faith seemeth to be shaken and weaken'd, rather than otherwise; and in stead of breeding patience and holiness, our souls do discover more impatience, rebellion, and more unholiness every way. Now the soul thinketh, when thus it is shaken in belief; How doe these Crosses confirm faith? and when such evill, dwelling in us, doth break out, how (faith the soul to it selfe) do afflictions beget the quiet fruit of righteousnes? I will answer you these questions familiarly: When Faith is shaken by evils befalling us, you ask how it is confirmed? I answer
Temptations Strengthen Faith.

Answer you by a double comparison: When a Linke burneth dim, to help the light, we knocke it; being beaten to any thing, it seemeth almost to goe forth; yet this beating it, doth cause it cast light far more cleerely.

Againe, how doth the shaking of a tree by stormy blasts, settle the root and the tree more firmly, though for a while it threaten the downesfall? Conceive of these, and you may understand, how faith though it seeme to be cast downe, yet tryed by tentations, it cometh to be strengthened. Now then if you aske, how they bring forth increase of righteousness, seeing you see more unrighteousnesse breake from you by occasion of them, then you have observed in your selfe heretofore: Consider that when a vessel of any liquor, hath mud and dregs settled in the bottome; it must be stird, that which seemed pure, must be made muddie before it can be cleansed: even so his
his troubling of us, vesselfull of uncleannesse, is the way whereby God doth cleanse us. Now if God he so renderly present by us, as it pleased him ere-while to be, it falleth so out, that much gold, many precious graces are discerned, which we before could not discover: and these are such sweet sours, so pleasantly tempered, that the grief is not so bitter, as the working of grace in us is delightfull. But what way soever, calamity doth not so hurt us, as scarre us; us who are loved of God and called home according to his purpose. Thus willing your peace, and hoping that all shall turne to good, the good of you both, I cease to trouble you.

FINIS
COMFORT AND INSTRUCTION in Affliction.

A Letter full of Divine Comforts, and instructions unto all, in the time of sickness, or any other chastisements of the Lord.

Written by Mr. Paul Bayne.

Psalm 94. 12, 13.
Blessed is the man whom thou chastisest, O Lord, and teachest him out of thy Law, that thou mayst give him rest from the days of adversity.

London.
Printed for N. Enderby and are to be sold at his Shop in Popes Head Alley, at the signe of the Starre.
1637.
Owing Sister, I cannot but write you a word in the love I beare you; hearing that your health doth stand more weakely with you, then herefore. I wish your bodily frailty might be an occasion to your soule, returning into it self, and drawing more neer to God in Christ Jes-Even as children love to be playing abroad, till night approaching, orh cause them return: so we love or to dwell at home with God, and
and our own consciences in godly devotion & meditation this way, but to be abroad in such courses as are most pleasing to our corrupt natures, till the night of affliction commeth; in which, unable to delight our selves as before, we turne backe into our owne soules and come home to our heavenly Father. I wish you this fruit of your infirmities the more, because not the having of sickness, but profiting by it, is a certaine mark that you are one whom God hath called, according to his heavenly purpose of life everlasting: for all things work to their good onely, who are thus called of God, and love him, Rom 8. And if you receive correction, so as to have the quiet fruit of righteousness by meanes of it, then you are children, not bastards; that looke as good metal is discerned from drosse, not by being in the fire onely, but by waxing more bright and refined by meanes of it; so are Gods
Gods Children desc cried from others, not by being in calamities, which is common to all, but by growing thereby more purged from their corruption, and more mining in the light of grace, to the lory of their Father which is in heaven. Wherefore seeing it doth so much concern you, to find some spirituall fruits of your visitation, will at this time teach you, how you may come to profit by this and of God, which hath followed you of late with more then ordinarly weaknesse of body.

First, you must labour to apprehend God, as a Father correcting you by these infirmities.

Secondly you must labor to find out the cause why, and to what purpose God doth follow you in such kind. And thirdly, you must seke to him, that he would teach you to profit, and lead you by his race to all that which is pleasing before him. Many account of sicknes, as a thing which commeth by course, a
In infirmities we must a thing (which may well be looked for in your yeers) which will wear away by the grace of God; only as it had a time to grow in, so it must have a time to goe in also; vanishing away in such thoughts, never observing the correcting hand of their God, in the thing which is upon them. The world as it doth not know God in all that good he doth them, when he filleth their hearts with joy and gladness, being worse then the oxe and ass, who know their Masters Crib; so againe, being drunken with ignorance, and lusts of ignorance, they know not who striketh them, when the punishing hand of God doth follow them: whereas every child doth know when it receiveth correction from the earthly Parent yea, the wilde Colt doth know when the Dam doth strike it. Wherefore (before all things) labour to see God, your Fathers hand in all things. Should we beat our children, and they should seem no
or so much as to heed our striking of them, would we not judge their fate for lorn? Again, this maketh us returne repentantly, when we see our heavenly Father calling us for his correction; this maketh us indevour to be humbled under God's hand when we thinke how od our Father is offended with us. Finally, this maketh us to conceive hope, that our visitation shall be for our good; the Parents hand poureth not Children.

Now for your clearer inspectition hereinto, and for your greater comfort, I will insist somewhat hastily upon that in Daniel, Dan. 3303435. where the Prophet shewing opened the impieties and executions of that wicked Antiochus, as likewise what was the state of the Jew without, who had not the power of godliness, in the verse before doth in these three lay downe the estate of the godly, while these troyals endured. And 5. hings there set downe: First, he de-
It is a good man's property

scribeth those that were godly, wise, and sound-hearted in their profession, from this, that they did labour to bring others to fellowship in the grace with them, through instruction, and means of that nature. Secondly, he lettered down the variety of evils which should befall them, fire, and sword. Thirdly, the cold comfort and slender helps which they were like to find. Fourthly, the end of all, viz. the purging out of all their corruptions, both of flesh and spirit. Fifthly, the durance of their suffering, namely, till God's appointed season were expired. From this (that the godly-wise are described from hence, that they instruct others) observe first by the way that a good man's property is, he will labour to make others good; he cannot go to heaven alone, a God catcheth him, so he will put his neighbour after with him; 

Philip did Nathaneel, Joh.1.4; according to that commandmen.

Tea
teach and edifie one another, 1 Th. 5. even as a sweet smell filleth the senses of such as are neere it, to grace affecteth those that converse with it. Now to persuade us to the practice of this, we have many reasons; first, God's glory, for the glory of a King, faith Solomon and the multitude of his subjects; therefore, when we labour to increase the number of the faithful, we do gain no small glory to God; as who then increase is Subjects, and enlarge his kingdom. Secondly, the good of the arty admonished; for as Saint times faith often, by this means Soule is saved: which is more to him that is converted, then if we set him the possession of the whole World. Thirdly, for our lives, it doth many ways benefit: thus to worke upon others; first, without us, we hence inne our selves great love in the hearts of others. This made Naomi interested in the heart of Ruth. This
This made Paul so affected to the Galatians, that they would have given him their eyes; whereas if this be wanting, no eie is sufficient and the neglect of this, is that which often maketh men meet with such trickes and turnes in their dearest friends, as are grievous unto them. Againe, while we do deale with others this way, we increase our own grace; for it is with that as our other stocke, the better it be husbanded, and the oftner be turned, so much the more it increased. Thirdly, in Heaven we shall have so much more ample reward, by how much more we have beene in this kind more fruitful. 

Dan. 12. 3. This is first, to rebuke the vaine complaints of men, we will cry out, O what an evill world it is! Whom may a man trust noe a dayes? But yet never goe about to reclaime a man from any evill way. What doest thou complain of evil world? It is the worse for thee. When doest thou admonish an
make others good, Uses of it.

Sey, one may be in thy company the yeer, and scarce hear a good ord, which tendeth to make sin fastfull, and vertue precious in the counts of others. What folly is us, to ben one that, which thou ult not stir thy little finger to reffe? As if a husbandman should mplanie, O here is nothing in my round, but bryers and nettles, and her weeds! but should never ma- tre it; low it dresse it, &c. Every he would condemne it as folly in m, so it is with us. Secondly, this puketh such as will not be admo-
ished: come and talke with them, rping upon this string, and they ill say, What have you to do with e? looke to your selfe, you shallower for your selfe, and not for e: but we must have to doe with em, and one with another: did see their beast ready to miscar-
under a burden, we are bound help it, and they would not mis-
it; much more are we bound help one another under the bur-
den
den of sin. Secondly, here we see, that the best service receiveth from the world oftentimes the worst wages. These that made others turn from their evill wayes, and themselves walked in all godly innocency; these are the Butts (as it were) at which the malicious world chiefly shooteth: thus it was with Christ, and the Prophets: which of them in manner were not cruelly butchered? The reason is, first, because such fruitfull Christians, the Divell feelleth his head so trod on by them, that he cannot endure them: but will catch them by the heele, and mischief them, as far as he is able. Let men flourish with humane wisedome, carry themselves for humane morall discourse and complement, incomparable: he stirreth not at this, for all the while he is but played with, his soule is recovered out of his power, he is not disturbed. Again, the malice of the divell is again, chiefly, so the envie of the world.
world; who cannot but hate such whose workes are better than their owne. The use of this is, that we judge not of men according to their afflictions. Oh when wee seeare one is in trouble, then we say surely he might have handled the matter with more discretion; had he beene wiser, he might have sa\ed all this trouble. Do we not see there, that the wisest that were fathers begetting others to wise-ome, this is their portion? Christ and the Apostles might thus bee pndemned as foolish; nay, such hose sins doe caus them into their troubles, such are foolish; but then afflictions come for a good inscence, then it is quite other-\ise. Secondly, we must sit downe, ad cast our accounts before hand, that we will not bee discouraged, for that measure wee meet with fom the World; but comfort our eyes in this, that God will judge not according to that successfe we have had, but according to that S
we have done, bee it good or evill. Thirdly, from this, that these godlywise suffer in body, as by fire and sword; in goods, as by spoiling; in liberty, as being banished and led captive, and that many daies; I pray you observe, that the Saints of God often suffer strong, many, and long afflictions. Thus Israels posterity endured triall 400 yeers. Thus the elder people of God were all led captive seventy yeeres; for we need great ones, that our corruptions may be subdued within us. For, as the untamednesse of some Colt is such, that unless he were sore ridden, he would never be broken, so is it with our rebellious nature. Secondly, little things do not exercise our faith, & make us to seake God: for as none for a little head-ach, or for the ranch of a pin, will seake to the bodily Physician or Surgeon; so is it with the soule, while it is troubled with like grievances spiritual. Thirdly, they must bee great, to make place for mercy abound
be great, divers, and long.

dant from God to us, and plentiful full Thanksgiving from us to God. If one heale a trifling matter, it neither so bindeth the Patient, nor commendeth the Physician: but if one heale us of some deadly incurable thing, O we say then, we could never have met with such a Physician; not the like in the world againe! Secondly, they must be many and divers, armies of men, as Job speaketh; because our corruptions are of divers kinds: and because againe as the body, if it take one thing still, it commeth to bee so much lette moved, by how much it is more familiar; so it is with our rules, that one uniforme evil doth y little & little, through custome become lette effectuall. It faring with a man, as with a horse; who ill spurred in one place, com- mith not to feel the spurre, nor bend his pace when hee is pric- ed. As they must bee strong and divers, so they must bee long also; because our evils which have been
been long growing upon us, will not goe away hastily; as stains which are long setled in a cloth, require much scowring. Now when we daily spot our selves with sin, we let it settle in; and doe not wash our selves by renewing faith and repentance: and so make way for the heavier hand of God, when he shall visit. But it may be objected, Paul faith, our afflictions are light and momentany. Answer: Not, that absolutely they are so, but in comparison of eternity; Secondly, light, in regard of that which grace maketh them, when sin is repented of, and Gods favour not hidden from us. This made Paul that he could not sleepe for joy, but sung at mid-night when hee was imprisoned, and sore handled. This made Peter, though he was to be brought forth the day after to death, he never slept better in his life: this will make us out-looke death, and all evills, when we have received from God the grace of repentance and for-
are many, yet light also.

forgiveness of sins; when the light of his countenance is towards us in his beloved. For as a plattered which upon a sore flesh causeth much smart, upon sound flesh stirreth no paine: so troubles lighting upon a soule healed thus, as is above-said, are nothing so grievous. This must make us provide ourselves, and arm our hearts with the comfort of the Scriptures, against we shall be tried, not being at all dismayed at them when they befall us. If we make account of cold weather entring, then wee will be appointed, & get double clothing; wee must be as wise for our soules, as bodies. Secondly, wee must cry to God, that he would say to our spirits by his Spirit, that our sins are forgiven; that is, I am he that justifieth thee, who can lay anything to thy charge? and we must give all diligence to make our calling and election sure, seeing that in these things standeth our sweet peace and comfort, when all the world be-
besides can shew us no comfort.

Fourthly, that they have so small helpe, and much dissimulation used towards them; observe hence, that when God will try us, men usually leave us; so Paul faith in the second of Timothy, that all had forsaken him, the first time of his appearing. Thus when Christ was smitten and attached, the Apostles shrunke away from him; according to that, when the Pastor was smitten, the sheepe were scattered. For of those that make shew to be friends, many are hypocrites; and therefore they will like swallowed take the Summer-shine with us, but bid us adieu when winter bloweth. Secondly, many that are found, yet are weake in love; and therefore not able to beare in sufferings. Thirdly, many want courage, and therefore say, I can doe him no good, I shall be looked into; as good one beare it as moe, when we cannot be eased: so
in Affliction: The uses thereof.

that their distressed brethren may shoke or swim, while they consult with such fleshly reason. The use is, that we would all learne hence not to trust in men, but in the living God; and to acquaint our selves with him, in whom there is no shadow of change.

Secondly, wee must not be dismayed, if many shrunke from us when they come to the wetting; some of Gods children suffering in this kinde, take it to heart and say: Oh, if others had done thus and thus, I could haue borne it; but it goeth to my heart, to see such serve me this part! Why, this is no great newes; doe not the Saints here; did not Christ, David, Iob, at his wives hand indure the same?

Fifthly, that these worthy Saints have such strong, many and long afflictions for the purging of them; Observe hence, that there are none so pure, but need fining, winnowing, and washing: even
All troubles worke together for

as drosse is with silver, offall and care with corne, foyle with cloth: so is corruption with our nature, it will never quite bee taken forth, till this body of sinne be dissolved; and God will have such remainders that we may be trained in humility by them. They are like the Swans blacke feete, in the whitest Christian. Secondly, that we weake ones may not be dismayed at that we find, when the best have their remnants of corruption.

Sixthly, that God doth give them to such crosses, only to purge them &c. Note hence, that all troubles are for the benefit of us, who are the Lords, He. 12. 10. For our pro-fit he chastiseth us; and that they may worke to this, hee doth send them by measure such, as may help us, not overwhelme us, Isa. 27. 8. He doth still fit us in our afflictions for our good, not proportion our evils to our deserving. Secondly, as hee doth send them in measure, so with his blessing; which turneth all.
all things that they work together to our good. True it is, that a while there is no such thing apparent; but in the end when we see what God will use them all to, then we shall see that all such conspire to our great profit. In building, a great while there is no comelines, but at length when every thing is fitted to the right place, there is a goodly correspondence in the whole; that is, a well proportioned answering of one part to another: so in the frame of our soules. And hence we see, how wide the wicked are in their reckoning. O they think they have sped us, they have prevailed; when indeed they have done good offices to us: for God maketh them of the Scullery to flowre us, Launderers to washed us, in the worst things hee suffereth them, or wicked spirits over them, to doe unto us. Secondly, seeing all our sufferings are from God, wee must look for profit by every trouble; unless we will make God not true,
true, or our selves not his children, truly godly, and loving him: and therefore they are much to be blamed, that through weakness will say, they cannot think, that ever such a thing shall doe them any good; for what cannot he make for our good, that calleth light out of darkness, if we will give glory to his Word by resting upon it?

Seventhly, that all these tribulations are to last but till the appointed time: We observe hence, that our times of exercise they are onely in the hands of God; even as the Physician onely must prescribe how long the course of the physicke or diet drinkes must bee continued; so must our God set the time, for which these troubles (which are the soules purgations) must be taken. Wicked men cannot set the time, for they would never make an end; nor yet our selves; for we would sip but lightly of so bitter cups; this is the Lords pre-
prerogative royall, to appoint the
reasons and terms, wherein afflic-
tions shall be continued. The use
of it is, that we take heed of pro-
voking him, who hath power to
hold us under evils while he please.
Secondly, we must flee to him in
prayer, that he would be pleased
to incline mercy towards us, and
make haste. Thirdly, we must know
that all our continuance in afflic-
tions is full of mercy, truth and wis-
dom. If Jacob should have held
Joseph in prison, would hee have
held him too long? no, no; much
lesse he (who is more merciful than
any father, and pitifull than any
mother) will hold us overlong: but
ordering all his corrections by his
Fatherly providence; will in his
good time make them worke al-
together for good, and not for evil
unto us.

In the second place, labour to
find out what sinne it is, which
offendeth God. Sinnefull men
strike not without a cause; the
just
just when he corree
teth, hath ever just reason: our consciences are like looking-glasses, which being overspread with dust, do shew nothing; but if they bee wiped clean, then little things appeare in them clearly. Wherefore enter into your soule, consider what state you stand in before God; whether you have that faith toward his grace which doth purifie the heart whether you have so learned Christ, that his vertue hath made you put off the old man, that is, deny those earthly lusts, which do lead naturall men (as it were) by the nose; and live godly, righteously, and with Christian sobriety, in use of those liberties which in themselves are lawfull. Many thinke, that if they know the truth and are in judgment against Pope-ry; if they like of the present Religion, presenting their bodies on the Sabbath, at the publike worship especially, if they have a prayer read in the house, and so a forme of private
private service, they thinke it is en-  
nough: though they never received  
that grace from Christ, which  
should reason their nature with a  
divine qualitie, even as the leaven  
doth the lump of dough; and stir  
up arise in them against their own  
corruption, which hindreth them,  
that they cannot doe any duty to  
God, so as they desire to do. Where-  
as all true Christians are Christ's  
souldiers, & find their lives a war-  
fare, the Spirit of Christ in them  
striving against their corrupt na-  
ture, and their corrupt nature lust-  
ing against the grace which Christ's  
Spirit hath wrought in them, so  
that they cannot doe the things  
they would doe. Wherefore look  
to this (deare Sister,) our best free-  
hold, our hope of Heaven doth  
stand upon it. Wee must not thinke  
as many do, we have not lived thus  
long, to call it now in question in  
what state wee stand: such like  
thoughts the devil suggesteth, that  
men through hardnes of heart, and  
blind
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>412</th>
<th>\textit{Wee must examine ourselves, for}</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
|     | blind presumption, might fall into evil. If you find that you stand in the saving grace of Christ, then you must examine your selfe, whether you have not provoked God, by negligent and carnall performance of Spirituall duty: as good stuff: may be marred in the making, so, the best duties, if our hearts be not brought into God's sight, and reverently prepared in them, they are marred, being in such manner performed: yea, they displease God. Cursed are such who do his work negligently; who draw neere him with their hearts being farre off from him: many were sicke, many smitten with death for receiving the Communion without reverence, faith, and repentance, 

\textit{1 Cor. xi.} Examine your selfe, whether you have set your heart to love the Lord Jesus, whom you beleive to have shedde his bloud for you; wee say, Love descends, it doth not ascend. Parents tenderly love Children, but Children
Children love not Parents in that degree; It is most true, twixt us and our heavenly Father, to whom our hearts beare too too cold love, if the best of them be examined. You had more neede to looke to this, it is so popular a disease. Finally, consider whether you have not used the lawfull things of this life intemperately; whether you have not neglected time, which is so precious; whether you have not beene careless to see that those who are under your government, should serve and feare the Lord. Consider, I say, such like things, that you may find what it is God would have you amend. Even as a medicine doth stirre up naturall heare to fight with the sicke humour, which is to bee expelled by it; so the medicinable sorrowes that GOD doth minister to his Children, doe stirre up grace, to drive forth such corruptions spirituall, as God would have removed by them.
In the third place, finding what hath been amiss, you must know, that you cannot redresse it, we cannot thinke a good thought; we can (like children taken in faults) promise to do no more, and be in them presently againe. Seeing then it is not in our strength to take fruit by our crosses, further than God (who giveth will and deed) doth worke it in us; we must come to him, and pray him to make us profit. Hee who will have sinfull men joyne instruction with correction; yea, who putteth into men this regard of dumb creatures, that he will not strike a dogge, but hee will make him see, so well as he can, what it is for which he striketh him; shall not hee instruct us, when his hand is now upon us, for want of duty to him? In vaine should cold iron be beaten, did not fire soften it: in vain should affections (which are Gods hammer) strike on our hearts, should not God by his Spirit, which is compared to fire, both
often our hearts, and enlighten us, to see our duties towards him. Wherefore good Sister, seeke to God for this Spirit of Christ, whereby may make all sorrowes fruitful unto you, and beare you up, that you sink not in them: For as bladder swim afoffe all waters, while they are filled with winde, so doe wee above all afflictions, while his Spirit is with us, to support us in them. If Physicke be given a bo-
y, and it will not worke, it is an ill gne; if our infirmities, which are ods potionsto our soules, if these love not our hearts to turne from une, and seeke to God for mercy. Christ, it is a fearfull signe of a bad soule, from which the life of God is departed. The Lord give you understanding in all things. Thus wishing you true comfort, both inward and outward, I com-
"p you to the grace of God in Christ Jesus. Farewell.

Your loving Brother,

Paul Bayne.
Another Letter.

G

ood M. D. I have recei

ved your Letters, wherein th

death of our friend, which befor

ewas conje\textsc{d}urall, is certainly affir

med: as also the manner of hi

deth expressed. The latter do

minister comfort for the bearing of

the former. For, death is not a mat

ter of so much sorrow to the god

ly, as the giving of repentance unto

life everlasting, is matter of joy and

gladness. The Lord grant that

his death, and the great mortality

which your eyes have seen, ma

be such real Sermons to us, that

we may bethinke us of our morta

lity, and turne our hearts to wise

dome, secke to gaine the time

which wee have heretofore mi

spent, by taking all occasions unto

good; and wee have vowed great

things in baptism, we have profes

sed our selves dead with Christ, t

that the world is crucified to us

and wee unto the life of the world

whic
which they promise in Baptisme.

which as Saint John expoundeth, both stand in the sinfull pleasures, profits, and glory which the children of the world imbrace as their portion. But alas, instead of taking this profession good, we see live in the World, taking in too freely and unweanedly, the pleasures of it, setting our hearts in the profits of it, more than is expedient. We have professed our lives in Baptisme, to be alive unto God, (for as the dipping or sprinkling of us, doth seal our ingrafting to Christ dying; so the comming forth, or wiping the water off, doth ale unto us this grace from God) d professe it (of our part) before m, the Angels, and the Congrega- on, that we are passed from death life, even a life which is unto od, and standeth in knowledge, righteousness, in holinesse, that no longer, now we as old man should live, but Christ Jesus should live in us. Now how bad are we in regard of this life,
God's children may die by the plague

who in the use of God's manifold mercies, hath care to shew forth the fear of his name, the love of holiness, to make manifest, that now he is alive with his head Christ Jesus unto God. The careless breaking of this covenant hath caused all this so grievous prejudice, yea, the Lord hath shewed how true that is, even in his own Children, many of whom he hath taken away, yet so corrected them that he would not remove his mercy from them, nor falsifie his truth, and therefore he hath given the repentance. And if God let you have this covenant of yours, and the maine failing in performance of it, you are blessed: Blessed are they that mourn (faith our Saviour) for they shall be comforted; but, We to those that go on laughing, for they, if they continue, shall wait everlastingly.

Your loving Brother
Paul Bayne.
Another Letter.

Mr. D. It pleaseth God still to let his hand hang amongst you, though he hath graciously abated his stroke, yea, very many places remain infected, though many die not of the infection: which should teach us both to remember that which is past, and to fear, in regard of that which may fall out. For this is one end why God doth not at a chop remove the evils which annoy us, that we might the better remember our sorrow past, and his goodness in our deliverance. Again, his hand doth hover often still about us, that we might fear before him, and meete him by repentance, in the way of his judgement; lest if that his patience wait on us in vain, our stroke at length be redoubled. Truely men are far from this, they thinke that there is no feare, it had a time to come, and must have a time to goe, and
They that humble themselves

...and the worst is past; but God li
keth not such security, yea hee of
ten causeth evil to meet it, where
the heart is blessed that feareth al
waies. Wherefore good M. D. do
you go on in sorrow, for manifold
wants of duty towards your God
...to gracios, yea, accuse your self
now, as too little humbled under
his mighty hand, when such
strength of his wrath was revealed
And in these thoughts raise up you
selfe to look unto his free mercy o
Christ, which reacheth (through
the merit of that bloud) to the par
don of all our sins, yea, to make us
who are the children of wrath
become the children of blessing
yea such blessing as doth follow u
in all our waies. O that is a worthy
sentenece for all that have escapee
this hand, to thinke on; Goethy
waies, sinneno more, that is, make
not a trade of walking after your
owne.,eies and hearts, left worst
things befall. And this I will tel
you, the practice of these things
though
though it restrain a little mirth, which the Wise man calleth madesse, yet it shall bring you to taste your soule a joy unspeakeable and glorious, such a rejoicing, which the world cannot take from you.

Your loving friend,

Paul Bayne.

FINIS.
THE TRIALL OF A Christians Estate:

OR, A Discoverie of the Causes, degrees, signes and differences of the Apostasie both of true Christians and false:

In a Sermon preached in London, by Master Paul Bayne, and afterward sent in writing to his friend W.F.

LONDON,
Printed by A. G. for I. N. and are to be sold by Sam. Endersby, at his shop, at the Starre in Popes head Alley. 1637.
To the Reader.

Christian Reader, good Wine needeth no garnand, it will praise it selfe: so (I persuade my selfe) will this ensuing Sermon, which a learned, holy and faithfull servant of God formerly viva voce in publique, founded in the cares of me and many, and afterwards, as a token of bis
To the Reader.

Christian love to mee, bestowed upon me in writing, which being so fruitful and necessary a labour, in the judgement of the godly and learned that have seen it, and so specially befitting these lukewarm and backsliding times, I thought I could not, without prejudice to thee, suffer it to lie by me for my private instruction and benefit alone, and therefore for thy good, the keeping in precious memory the Preacher thereof, whom the Lord hath gathered into his barne, and for the glory of God.
To the Reader.

God especially, I have consented that it be made more publique and common, by coming under the preffe. The Lord grant, that it may have that success in me and thee, which bee that gave first life unto it in studying, and brought it forth by preaching, intended, and in consenting and causing to have it printed, desire: so shall the feeble, weake and doubting Christian, be taken by the hand, staied and comforted against the feares of totall backsliding, and we all shall be of the number of them.
To the Reader.

them which follow faith to the conservation of our soules: which the Lord for Iesus Christ his sake grant. Amen.

Thine in his best desires,

W. F.
THE TRIALL OF A CHRISTIANS ESTATE.

HEBREWS 10:39. But we are not they which withdraw ourselves into perdition, but fellow faith unto the conservation of the soule.

The Apostle having in the verse before remembered the fearfull estate of such who through unbelief are withdrawne from God, doth in this verse prevent a scruple.
ple which might arise in some timorous consciences, doubting whether they were not in this case next before threatened. Hee doth therefore take such weake ones by the hand, strengthening them, by bearing them witness of their condition, manifested by the fruits above mentioned, verse 32, 33, 34, which estate is set downe here in this verse: First negatively, by deniall of their unbelieving revolt. Secondly affirmatively, by avouching their perseverance in faith. Either of these properties of unbelief and belief, being amplified from the effects which accompanied them, viz. destruction of the soule (for that is to be understood from the latter clause) and salvation of the same.

The summe of the words. Fear not though I tell you that backsliders are vessels of no delight, for yourselves with my selfe, are not such who steale from our companies, leaving our militarie profession,
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

 affliction, which would turne in this life and the life to come to our further destruction; but we continue in faith, and put forth our belief more and more, as occasion requireth, which bringeth us here and everlastingly to see the Lord's salvation.

Now for the instructions which both the scope and matter of the verse include in them. First, that Paul doth confirm them by bearing them witness of their estate. It doth teach us, that we must establish our weake brethren, by bearing them record of the graces wrought in them; we who have found grace must confirm others. If any thing more smart be uttered, we must mollifie it with such wise prevention as Physicians, if they foresee ought harmefull to the bodie, they correct it with other ingredients, that it may wholesomely be received. If we saw one ready to trip, we would reach him a hand, and sustaine him from
from falling: much more must we shew this love to the soule shaking through frailtie. This wisedom Christ used, hee quenched not the smoaking flaxe: the reasonable testifying to men their good things causeth them to take increase: our honour of them, our dutie to the comfort of their lives and to the truth, doth require it. Such therefore are to bee taxed who wanting this prudence, handle the word in dividing it like him in the Embleme, who gave to the Asse a bone, to the dogge straw: such are those: Pastors who discourage good devotions, and incourage men carnally minded, like unto them we reade of, Ezechiel, chap. 13.22. Such again are they amongst private Christians, who like Jobs friends are a breaking to them, whom they should comfort and confirme.

Secondly, we must be provoked by this example to incourage weake ones when they are doubting
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

Tinging of their estates: for as a timorous patient imagining twenty evils, when his Physitian assureth him that his case is nothing so, is well satisfied: so here.

Again, in that he faith, We are not they that withdraw. Hence we are given to understand, that some may fall away from the Graces received. In some manner God's own children and others are reported to have fallen: David, Saul, Peter, Alexander, &c. But that this may be more distinctly open, three things must be considered.

1. First, from what the godly truely sanctified may fall; how farre others.

2. Secondly, from whence falls come, and the difference of them.

3. Thirdly, what are the sympotomes or signes of a state declining from God.

To the first, a man not having the true grace of the elect, may fall from all outward privileges, which hee holdeth as a member of the visible.
visible Church. Secondly, from the effects of his Grace in life and conversation. Thirdly, from the very habituall gifts, which were the fountain whence his fruits flowed. Thus bee may come to be twice dead, and in worse case than ever.

The Lords chosen may fall from their outward prerogatives: but that divine nature still abideth in them, and it is onely with their graces, as it is with the minde in distempers of melancholy, and phrensie; with the Sun in eclipses; with the tree when leaves and fruits faile it; with the natural life when it moveth not, ne yet breatheth sensible: which in diseases of the Mother is often discerned. Their faith is an ever failing faith; their life an eternall life; their seed a seed abiding in them.

Now for the second, viz. what are the causes of falling away, and that so diversely; this opened will lend a more thorow light to the former. The causes which worke
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

In withdrawing us are inward or outward. But the verity of these declinings springeth chiefly from the inward.

The cause in the Lords's children is, the state of their grace, which is such as hath still relics of sinne dwelling with it.

The cause of the others total fall, is an essentiall defect in their grace, which teacheth not to make a true union betwixt Christ and them, nor yet to produce true sanctification. In a word, the cause of the ones persevering, and the others total deficiency, is not only to be taken from God's power and gracious pleasure, from Christ his intercession, from the flinting of Satan to the heele of the true Christian seed: but also from the essentiall qualification, and disposition of the grace bestowed upon either. But this is a difficulty further to be cleared; How wee may formally distinguish these gifts which are in the Christian that perse-
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

persevereth from those that are in him that temporiseth. The difference is double:

1. First, in the union which is made by them.

2. Secondly, in the different productions which follow upon so different manners of being united with Christ.

To open the first, is set downe this conclusion: The spirituall gift of the temporiser doth meerly enlighten him to see Christ, but doth not move his will to go unto Christ, as given him of God, that he might not perish but have eternal life. His application is an overweening hope, taken vp by his owne presumption; it is not a motion which the spirit doth elicite and draw out, but such as is his enlightning.

In the Word of Christ are two things: first, the truth of it, a true word: Secondly, the goodness of it, a good word. That may be apprehended, God giveth his chosen not
not only an apprehension, in the
understanding of the truth, and
goodness of it; but a motion of
affiance, which maketh the soule
go to and clasp about Christ whom
it beholdeth. Hence it is, that com-
ming and believing, *[oh. 1.12. *Iob.*
6.35.37. is apprehending, as when
a thing is taken by the handle: and
from this property of Faith doth
come that internall union twixt
the believer and Christ, which ma-
keth them dwell mutually one in
the other. Hence it is that the true
believer doth more affect Christ,
price him, joy in him, more than
the benefits by them.

Now the Papists faith is a mere
enlightning, not having any con-
fidence within the compasse of it,
(for a man may be found in their
faith, and in damnable despaire at
the same instant) and the tempor-
ers faith having no more than an
apprehension in the understanding
of the good word of salvation joy-
ned with presumptuous perswasi-
on and fallible hopes conceived by himselfe on false reckonings: these cannot inwardly unite him with Christ; but looke as a Well is so united in the body by the skin encompassing it, and some kinde of continuation with the other members; but hath not sinewes, nerves, arteries shot into it from head and heart, as the other parts: so these by their common illumination and profession have conjunction with the body, but want the influence of that more neere ligament of that affianced motion of the will, which onely floweth from Christ into his proper members. And this is the first ground of their after failing: for looke as standing-waters, or never such torrents which have no head of living spring-waters to feed them, cannot in time but dry up: so these not having Christ the Well-head of all grace, whatsoever is in them, in time fadeth and vanisheth to nothing.

From defect of internall union, which
which is, as it were, the fountain, commeth a difference in grace derived. The temporizers, being such as doth never truly humble him, such, as is superficial, insincere: in a word, such as doth not truly sanctifie him: by reason of which defect, it is not permanent.

First, not being within the gracious light of this Sunne of righteousness, the depth of his wound is never gaged, and though he know much humiliation, yet hee is never truly humbled. First, hee seeth not with humble conscience the infall depravation of his nature: his displeasure is more against the fruits, than roots whence they issued. Paul a Pharisee knew not concupiscence; a Papist acknowledgeth not this as sinfull after hee was once baptised, whereas this was the highest pitch of Pauls and Davids penitentiall exercise.

But may not the temporiser now and maintaine the truth of his Doctrine, yea, propound it
fruitfully to others? Answer. He may (by faith infused) conceive and assent to it, yea, deliver it to others, but so, that the power of it doth not reflect on himselfe, so as to be humbled in this respect: but as the Moone giveth us light which is not rooted in the body of her, for that continueth darksome: so they receive light from Gods Word, and set it forth to others, but have none in themselves. Secondly, not being within grace, his confession and passion under sin is not free and voluntary, but extorted either from some evidence of light, or fact evincing him; as Saul to David confessed; or the racke of Gods terrours inforcing it from him. Whereas the children of God, who now see, that the more their sinne is, the more grace superabounded; that their baseneffe is his glory, whose grace they live under, they frankly, yea, delightfully humble themselves in confessing their vileneffe. Thirdly,
not being within the grace of Christ with found affiance, he never grieve that sinne as it is enmity against his God: for to be contrite in this regard, implyeth a love to God, which cannot be in him who hath not found God loving him first: hee is vexed at his sins in respect of his miseries hee seeth imminent, or only as they are worldward, shamefull aberrations from practice of such apparent vertues, which men may repute glorious, and much affect. In a word, hee is never truly humbled, which his obedience being partiall doth witness; for hee will take and leave that which hee heareth at his owne pleasure: yea, if crosses come, hee is too proud to humble himself under Gods hand; he is lifted above others, whom hee outrrippeth in common graces: he is enflorous, without conscience of that naturall condition under sin, which is common to him with others. And from hence it is, that
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

at length his grace faileth: for as a house builded on the sands, without a due ground-worke laid; or plants unrooted cannot indure: so this frame which wanteth the foundation and root of grace (such as humility is) cannot persift.

Secondly, I lay from this prime defect of inner union, all the temporers graces produced are superficial, height, full of overture: whereas those in sound believers are solid, substantiall, not res intrinsicas defectuose, things which though outwardly they have the apparence, yet are inwardly defective. Hence it is that Paul calleth their godliness, a figure of godliness, 2 Tim. 3. 5. their knowledge an externall forme of knowledge, Rom. 2. 20. that Christ maketh all they have, a semblance, a seeming onely, Luk. 8. 18. for looke as a wilde herbe, though it have but the name and common nature, yet it diiffereth much from one which groweth in gardens, better manured and
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

...and as a blew, died with blockwood, though it seeme brighter a while, yet is not so substantiall as that which is woaded (and therefore we say it is a true colour:) so here, though the graces of the temporiser have the same name and common nature, (for they are inferior works of the spirit) yea, though they may exceede in shew, yet for the truth and substance, they are nothing to those that are wrought in honest hearts; and from hence come two things.

First, their graces are soone growne up; for a thing superficiall is done in halfe the time that a substantiall thing is a working. They get the start: and, while many a true heart before them in the Lord, is complaining of wants, and weaknesses, sinful inclinations, usurping in them; they are carried, as it were, per saltum, to their perfection. But as a true birth, though slowly at the first, yet still taketh increase, whereas a mole groweth fester at
The first, but soon ceaseth: and looke as in nature, things the soon-
est ripe, are the soonest rotten: So it fares with these lep-Christians.

Secondly, I lay their graces are insincere, their hearts are never purged from some sin which they love and like to live in, for sinister ends intertaining the message of Gods mercy, which is not that they may reverence him, and serve him all their daies without flauish ter-

rour: but they gladly heare it, as hoping that they have a protection by it, though they hold on in their own courses. For this it is that the elects faith, which never faileth, is called a faith without hypocri-
sie; that the true believer is onely said to have an honest heart.

As God hath made some re-

medies in nature, such as purge
universally every peccant humor, as the Phystitians Catholicon, &c. Some againe that purge, cum de-

leto, that expell choler, but meddle not with melancholy; phlegme, but
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

But stirre not choler: So this medicine of grace, which God infuseth to an honest heart, it is a Catholic expeller of all knowne sinne, great or little. The grace of the Temporifer purgeth out the root of sin; represseth the moving and paroxysmes, as it were, of some noise sinnes onley, as in Herod. And hence it is that the grace of the Temporifer doth not continue: for as corne growing up with twitch, riers, thornes, is at length smothered; and as wholesome meate in a stomacke full of flying choler, is at length vomited: so reigning in growing up with these seeming races, doth never cease till they be brought up and discharged, Mark 8.12. 13, 14. Thus much to shew that difference of graces in Gods children and others, which useth that the falls of the one are not recall nor finall, which is incident to the condition of the other.

Now taking it as granted, that the Lords children fall, by reason of
of the reliques of sin dwelling in them, I come to name the externall means, which actually bring forth into Apollasie this inbred defecti-
on. These sometimes worke it more violently at once, sometime successively, by some hainous wa-
fting sin, which like a strong poison dispatcheth all quickly. Crosses repeated, and gradually increased,
lures of pleasures and profits, un-
comfortableness, which accom-
panied by many means Christi-
ian courses, (dead worke is quick-
ly given over ) examples of the multitude, a strong back-bias, by which the divell sometimes draw-
eth from persisting in grace, offence at the simplicity, which to eye of flesh seemeth to be in Christian courses, at dissension in opinions amongst men of the same professi-
on, at the sins observed, and falls once knowne by such, who make profession; the seducing calls of falle Teachers, the glorious showes of holiness, and whatsoever things of
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

of this nature, by which men through Satan's working are with-drawn. Now followeth the third thing, the symptoms or signs of a declining soul. This one thing must be premised, lest that weak ones should cast themselves further down by mistaking the matter. The presence of these evils, and sense of due dispositions or actions, are not evil signs of a dangerous declining soul, but when they are willingly carried without remorse, renewed desires and endeavours after the contrary: for as one may be without God's gracious presence to his feeling, and yet not a forsoaker of God; so one may be without these things, and not leaving them, but rather left of them (God's wisdom for many ends so dispensing) while by grief, faith, and renewed desires, he doth follow after them.

This consideration interlaced for the right understanding of the matter in hand. Let this be the first signe, viz. a feeble, lifeless actiou...
of grace willingly admitted: v. g. as when a man can performe any Christian duty without all power spirituall and good devotion; nevertheless doth not challenge himselfe, as if it were ill with him in that regard. Læst ættiones læstæ argument facultates: As when the eye seeth not as it hath done, wee may presume the instruments or faculties are not as they have beene: So here, when we doe not things with the vigour we have done, it is a signe of infirmity, and a faculty inwardly or outwardly hindred: but when wee can thinke well enough of this state, it is a signe of Apostasie and wilfull declining; luskysh reachings are the fis forerunners commonly: Gods people declining have fallen first to these formalities, to performance of duties in a perfunctory fashion, the heart and raines far from the Lord, in them.

The second signe is a preposterous appetite of unwholesom food, liked
liked well enough, no way disturbant to us: when men can be without preaching, or at least without any that moveth their consciences; when they can extol frothy windy stuffe, which filleth them, but never feedeth them, so as their soules are not the better for it toward God. It is a signe the man is willing to sleepe that draweth the curtaines about him: It is a presumption, that these are willing to nap in their sins, that love not such a light of truth as should awaken them. Not bearing the wholesome word is the preamble of Apostasie.

A Third token is indigestion of that we hear, borne contentedly; when the heat of love doth not so digest things, that they might after be distributed into the veins of every good word and worke: because they receive not the truth in love, &c. 2 Thess. 2. When meate is taken in, and passeth away not altered by the stomacke, it leaveth the body in an atrophie, that is,
The fourth signe is an inordinate appetite after things hurtful and noxious: as when a man feeleth no hurt, though hee intermeddle immoderately in the cares of the world; though hee intemperately quaffe in these sinfull pleasures which last but a season: when a man loves to follow the good healths, wee may boldly say, hee loves to breed ill health. Worldly cares and pleasures are the things of which the soule is drunken, and surset; and these are the thornes and weeds with which the seed of graces never thriveth.

A fifth signe may be the disaffeding of our brethren, whom we have acknowledged as begotten of God. The Divell cannot bring a man who hath knowne any good, to confront and despise him directly: therefore hee entreth them with this politicke traine; he teacheth them first to be bold and trample
trample downe his Image, and so at length bring them to dislike God, 2 Tim. 1. 4. Demas (as it is likely) turning Apostate, forsooke the Apostle.

The sixth signe is, when there is felt no reluctation in regard of our daily weaknesses & lesser sins, but they digest with us: if the soule were not fallen well asleep, it could not conceive so well. When nature (things able to provoke taken in) maketh not resistance, her strength is feeble: So here. But where a man is grown to this, that he can go on in his impenitency without checke, it is an evident signe he is downe the wind in a wilfull declination; yea, that he is farre gone in it. Thus you have heard that some fall from their grace; and for further declaration you have, seen cleared, how farre all sorts may fall; whence commeth their falls, with the difference of them. Thirdly, what are the indicants of a soule declining.
The use of all is; First, as to stirre us up to take comfort in the true worke which God hath begun; so to make sure that we have received such grace as shall not faile: would wee not be loth to rear such a frame in a materiall building, which should after come downe upon our heads? We are builders, let us make sure to digge so deep, and ground our worke so well, that though it should shake, (as they say, firme houses will) yet it may be farre from feare of ruine. In taking gold, wee refuse washed and light gold, or clipped, wee weigh them, ring them, &c. In receiving grace be not lesse carefull that it be right currant, not wanting a graine of due weight.

Secondly this, that many fall away, must awaken us to more circumspection; though it light upon some men only, it is every mans terrour. We have great reason, for wee live in most perilous times, wherein the holy Ghost hath war-
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

ned us that the dampe of sin shall make the love of many waxe cold: wherein the contagion of Apostasy is epidemicall; is growne a popular disease. For now what lukewarmnesse? what a weak pulse beateth every where? men care not to deale with themselves to hold their thoughts to heavenly things, to awaken their affections, to renew their faith, to blow up devotion; to live in an holy contention; nay, this in our daies is counted a superfluous unnecessary course, forged in the head of some over-forward fellowes; it is the undiscreeete fervor of green youth, which ages wildome wil take up. Others more moderately spoken, thinke that every thing new is dainties, and that prime affections cannot be retained: a ffig-leafe, nature, art, grace, go from leffe perfect to more perfect. Whether doth a child at eight yeeres or eightenee most love and joy in his inheritance? Doest thou not count thy prentifes two last yeeres.
yeeres better than foure of his first?
In stead of appetite to the Word, now some thinke the Sabbath may be tolerably sanctified without any preaching: some count it enough, if they be where preaching is, let it be what it will be; farre from such as is able to worke on their soules; as if the orders of the person, not the supernaturall gifts of knowledge and wisdome made the Sermon (but these must not be severed:) some count such plaine preaching (as heretofore was efficuall in them) lesse diligent, and lesse learned. Thus the Divell not able quite to make them cast off the ordinance, perswades them that change is no robberie; and that they may sleepe the quieter (neglecting such preaching as was powerfull in them) he casts them this pillow, suggetting that they leave not that which was effectuall in them toward God, but that one-ly which was indiligent and unlearned.

Againe,
The trial of a Christians Estate.

Againe, in stead of working the Word upon our affections, how many content themselves to exercise their critickes, this or that was well spoken, &c. and there is an end? For the world, men have their hands in it elbow-deep; yea, many who in their times have made shew of a more heavenly minde, some are now so shie to their brethren, that they will not looke at them, not meete on the same side of the streete, not know them. How many, whole hearts would have switten them in lesster offences can now commit as great, and it never upbraids them? nay, esteeme this tendernesse scrupulous simplicity, and melancholie austeritie. The more vulgar then this diseaſe is, the more cautelous wee must be.

Thirdly, wee see now that who will keepe life and power in his course, endeavouring a good conscience in all things, they must passe the pikes of evill tongues, which
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

which are shaken against them. For now such heare, as if they were humorists, new-fanglists, Precisians, proud, singular, simple, melancholike persons, what not? Finally, the Diuell to make revolts, now refines his wits, and turnes Angell of light, hanging out our owne colours, that hee may the easilier surprize us; and pretending perfections, which we yet want, doth transport many, whom neither crosse nor allurements would prevale against. So that we had need, if ever, to walke warily, looking to the author and finijher of our faith: yea, thankfully, that in evill times we are kept (though weakely) alive in his light. Thus much of the second doctrine.

The third followeth in these words; to perdition, viz. of the soule, 2 Pet. 2. 20. 21. even as hee that goeth out of the light, must needs come into darkness; so he that leaveth the living God, the fountain of blessed life, must needs fall.
fall into perdition. The relapse into any sickness is more dangerous, than the first entrance into it: for nature is now more enfeebled, much spent in her former resistance; again, the disease is much strengthened as a prevailing conqueror: So in these declinings from the healthsome state of grace in some sort attained, sin is stronger (the devil coming with seven worse spirits) and our capacity of receiving health lessen; we being twice dead, and for the degree more removed from grace, than ever before, & this end befalls backsliders most deservedly: for they offer God the greatest indignity, it being better they had never admitted him, than having taken him in, to dislodge him causelily. Again, when such as forgetting their military Sacrament, steal from their colours, are justly punished with temporal death; how deservedly are these punished with eternal perdition, who respect not that warfare, to which they
they bound themselves by Sacrament, who flinch away, leaving that displaid ensigne of a zealous profession, under which sometime they have served.

But how can destruction follow on declining courses, when God's chosen cannot perish; and the other fort were never in state of salvation? Ans. This is said to be the end of it, not absolutely without exception, but respectively, if wee by repentance take not straight steps the sooner, & get our halting healed.

To the first it may be answered, that the Apostacy of God's Children in itself tendeth to destruction; it is his mercy that preventeth them in this way, not the fruit of their backsliding. Secondly, they after a fort destroy themselves, when they bring their spiritual life into a swoone, and leave not themselves breath or motion discernable. For the wicked though they never were thorowly vindicated or redeemed from destruction, yet to the judgement of charity.
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

Charity they seemed so: now it is usual to speak of things not according as they are, but as they appear. Secondly, they, though they never had that sound eternal life, yet they had such a life as is in a Wen; and though the rootes of their griefe were not brought away, yet the effects were so restrained, and for a time suspended, that to their seeming they were made well. Thirdly, they are said to fall into destruction, though they are in it; because they by Apostacy goe to the heigh, & consummation of it; as we are said by a godly course, to go to life everlasting, which in some degree we have already. And the truth is, that falling away doth bring the untimely judgments, doth procure an effectuall delivering to Satan, who doth afterwards more fully fill them with his efficacy: For as God maketh the sincerest Saints often of those, who have bee the foulest Sinners: So here Satan, when hee gets such an one, who hath beeene in the way an Angel of light, hee doth make
make of him an incarnate divell. In nature the sweetest things when they turn, become the lowest. This mortal sicknesse we must take heed of; and if our love, zeale, tendernes of conscience be diminished, wee must timely seek out for remedy. I know men thinke, we are not so far gone; once beloved, alwaies beloved; we have left nothing but meere curiosity, melancholike austerity, men in many considerations reproveable; such as those, who joine not with them, we hope may be in Gods favour, and goe to heaven. But never take such paines to deceive your selves; these vaine words will not still rocke the conscience asleep. If thy spirituall actions be fallen asleep, thy contention against she evil dwelling in thee ceased, thy appetite after sincere milke & meat abated, thy tendernes of conscience impaired, and thou canst sit under all these things without repentant sorrow; assur thy selfe, the end of this (if thou preventest it not by repentance)
tance) shall be destruction. Luke-
wariness (though men think it a part
of prudence) it is odious with God,
and will make us be cast up with dis-
pleasure: true it is that God's wrath
is not presently espied against such,
but this is onely because wee see not
the spiritual judgments, where-
with they are stricken; and we see in
nature the thing is long bred and
conceived, before it is brought
forth and manifested.

Secondly, we must be exhorted
here to stand constantly in our cour-
ses, who doe walke with God in
some life and power, though not
without great weakness; let us not
give over our labour and holy con-
tention, to which the presence of
sin & defect of righteousness have
pricked us: this work of grace goeth
against the streame of nature, if we
intermit to ply the oare of holy ex-
ercise, wind and tide will carry us
back againe. Where we cease to im-
prove by good husbandry the grace
received, there it beginneth to be
impaired.
impaired. True it is, that the shaking up of our selves, resisting both, the restless aspiring after things which we are still call from with violence, are in their kinds laborious: but remember, what men do in their earthly warfare; they (for pay of two shillings a day) march thorow places often full of difficulty, lie (the ground being their bed) in the ayre, no covert over them; in their victuals they are sore frighted, often they carry their lives in their hands, and fight in the Canons mouth: to think upon this once, is enough to make us ashamed of our softness and cowardice. But we are of faith, as we say, and men of courage & wisdom. But alas, first who hath these things? Secondly, who doth put them forth? thirdly, who is constant in holding them, and making shew of them as occasion is offered?

We may observe this as a fourth instruction, what is the property of a sound believer or believe, viz. to
persevere when they are tried & opposed: this faith is a precious, sincere, never failing faith; it groweth from one degree to another; the true believer, hee holdeth the faith against hell gates themselves, that is, the powers of hell which oppose him in it: which that we may more fruitfully understand; we must know that where found faith is wrought, there the devil plaisth the affillant, bending all his force to dis-arme them of this divine shield, by drawing them back againe to unbelieve and false confidences which will not helpe them.

To this purpose hee mustereth crosse, vomitteth deluges of false landers; stirres up the neerest friends of such as are now come to God by faith, to persecute them most bitterly: sometime he sheweth them impossibilities, in sense of seeing that they desire and believe: sometimes he troubles their feelings, that so he may shake them in their believing: sometimes hee withdraweth their faith
faith by false objects, which he propo-
seth to them; but if hee cannot
break off their belief, then he laieth
about to repress the fervency and
the renewed exercise of their belief;
by unsettling us with some new de-
vices, when we are more intent; by
making our exercise painful, and
uncosfortable, overcasting the light
which was wont to shine to us in
the promises; hindring us from fee-
ling the sweet comfort in them; ex-
citing the reliques of sloth, deadnes,
inconstancy that are in us:sometime
by caufleffe fears & finfull shamefati-
nesse hee withdraweth us from our
holy devout exercise. But this found
faith quencheth all these fiery darts
which are throwne against it; and
like as a tree which shaken, rotteth
more deeply; or like as a torch wch
beaten, blazeth more brightly; or
like as a star, which when the aire is
obscured, shineth most clearly: so is
it with this root, torch, this glorious
star; these powers of darknesse doe
nothing in the end, but lend it a more
beau-
The trial of a Christians Estate.

beautiful lustre, than it ever put forth while it was not berounded with any such enmities.

True it is, that the best faith may hang the wing, being weatherbeaten, and seem to retire under some more vehement delays or temptation: but that which flieth to day, flieth againe to morrow; and like as it is with those, whose going backe helpeth them to take their rise and fetch their leap more commodiously:

So here, faith (through him that is the author & finisher of her) by how much she gave backe, by so much in her renewed indeavours she commeth forward more successfully. From this ground many come to be reproved: Some there are, who will seeme to follow sincerity & sanctification, while making shew of these things is gainfull; but if crosses come they will lay down their weapons, and will provide to sleepe in whole skins, whatsoever become of other matters. Some, if they be delayed beyond their own time, cast up their hopes,
hopes, and are ready proudly to say, It is in vain to serve God. Amongst the Lords children, how many are there who follow not faith, growing up from faith to faith, renewing the exercise of it in fasting on the gracious promises which are made unto us? Men that will check themselves if they omit the act of mercy, of testifying truth, of justice where occasion is offered; blame not themselves for neglecting to renew their faith towards God, when his promises renewed, or experience of his goodness and truth doth call for it from us.

Some there are, who weakly fore-speak things, signifying their unbelief, by saying, they shall never see this or that evil mending with the; that it is but a folly to attempt further, seeing we strive against the streame. But this is not to be carried with full fail of faithfull persuasion on him who hath spoken good to us, but through attending to that sense & reason speaketh, to yeeld to unbelief.
Secondly, we may hence here gather the truth of our belief. Hath it stood through help of God's grace in temptation? Christ letteth us see that he was our supporter, it is a true signe of grace ever failing: buildings which stand when winds and storms beat on them, are presumed to be sure grounded, whereas the paper-walls and painted raftles of these who have not unfained grace, cannot indure any sound assault which is made against them.

The last thing to be marked is, what it is that doth bring us to see salvation here and everlastingly, it is our belief, 1 Pet. 1, 5. God's pleasure of working this or that for us, is first made knowne by his Word revealing it. Secondly, it is delayed for a triall of them to whom it is given. Thirdly, it is executed. Now the revelation of his future pleasure onely faith apprehendeth; the delay (wherein many occurrences are incident) speaking the contrary this faith beareth, by clearing to that which formerly it heard from God. When the thing is executed,
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

Then faith is changed with sight; so that it is plain, that faith bringeth us to see salvation, for it never giveth over till the thing be in present; it doth keepe us within the tower of God's impregnable strength for the present, which is our safety against all enemies; it doth bring us out of all troubles by holding God's gracious Word; as a man commeth from a deep dungeon, by climbing a scaling ladder cast to him, or sitting upon an Eagle's wing which would mount up with him.

In the Chapter following there is a catalogue of glorious believers, the end of their faith being likewise recorded. Whence we may first see that error of Papists, who though they ascribe our first forgivenesse of our sines to faith; yet our after-righteousness and salvation they referre to good workes, penall satisfactions, application of the Churches treasure, &c. withdrawing themselves from faith, when now they are brought to be in state of grace; but
The trial of a Christian's Estate.

Faith is never to cease till the thing believed be now in sight, neither will the same thing be got both by faith and works; for these are such as will not be compounded, the Apostle being witness.

Againe, hence we see how wofull a thing it is to cast away our confidence, we fling away the plaster that should heale us; for whatsoever evills were upon us, yet holding our faith on the truth and mercy of God in Christ, they should vanish away as shewers, which on our garments, dry up in time and come to nothing. Yet, their danger is hence discovered, who though they make conscience of murder, adultery, injustice; yet care not to live in unbelief, which is of all sines the most dangerous, for the other should not hurt us deadly, were it not for this; that wee will not by faith take that medicine which should heale us.

Secondly, this must encourage us to persevere in our faith: as Christ looked to the end of the Cross, so must we looke to the end of our faith, that...
we may indure all difficulties the better, with which wee are encountered. True it is, that men are often most deceived, where they trust most; but leaning on the Lord, and waiting on him, thou shalt never be deceived, nor miscle of his promised salvation.

But in temporary evils we cannot assure ourselves of deliverance.

Answ. The truth is, we see not deliverance, because wee exercise not faith in particular promises so farre as we might. Secondly, we must ever be assured of issue, such as is joined with salvation. Thirdly, though it keepe us not out of the fire, yet faith will keepe us from burning, or taking hurt in our most fiery trialls; wherefore let us renew our faith in Gods precious promises, assuring our selves that the end of it shall be salvation of soule and body in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ. To whom with the Father and Spirit,&c. Amen.